# GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING PATHS 

by<br>Arman Boyacı<br>B.S., Industrial Engineering, Galatasaray University, 2007<br>M.S., Industrial Engineering, Bogazici University, 2009

Submitted to the Institute for Graduate Studies in
Science and Engineering in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy

Graduate Program in FBE Program for which the Thesis is Submitted Boğaziçi University

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

First and foremost I would like to thank my advisor Tınaz Ekim Aşıcı for her guidance during these past six years. Without her guidance and constant feedback this work would not have been achievable. She have been a great mentor by allowing and even encouraging me to choose my own direction. I acknowledge all her efforts for introducing me to people in her academic network and for encouraging me to present our work at various conferences. I am also thankful for the example she has provided as a successful scientist and professor.

I would thank Mordechai Shalom for all his support during this journey. I had the pleasure of working closely with him and I have enjoyed the opportunity to watch and learn from his knowledge and experience. I appreciate his positive attitude, his creativity to solve problems and dedication.

I would thank Shmuel Zaks for inviting me to Technion and I want in particular thank him for proposing to study this topic. I would thank Bernard Ries. The chapter five would not exist without fruitful and long discussions with him during my visit to Paris Dauphine University, LAMSADE. I am looking forward to working with him more in the future. I am fortunate to have had Taylan Cemgil and Caner Taşkın serve on my committee. I appreciate all the valuable comments and advises they provided.

I gratefully acknowledge the funding sources that made my PhD work possible. I was funded by the Tübitak BIDEB 2210 fellowship for five years. My work was also supported by the following grants Tübitak 111M303, 111M482, 213M620 and BAP 6461D.

I also thank my friends for providing support and friendship that I needed. I would especially like to thank Serhan Daniş for being such a good flatmate for three years during my PhD .

Last but not least, I want to thank my loving and caring family. Thanks to my parents and my brother Mark for all their love, encouragement and support in all my pursuits. Thanks to my loving, encouraging and patient wife Bilge for the wonderful life that we share together.


#### Abstract

\section*{GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING PATHS}


In this work, we introduce and study a new graph class: namely the graphs of Edge-Intersecting Non-Splitting Paths (ENP). First, we consider a special case where the host graph is a tree: the graphs of Edge-Intersecting Non-Splitting Paths in a Tree (ENPT). We study the characterization of the ENPT representations of chordless cycles (holes) which are one of the important basic graph structures. Under some assumption, we give an algorithm that returns the unique minimal representation if it exists. However, we show that the problem is NP-complete in general that is when this assumption does not necessarily hold. Then, we consider a more general case for which the host graph can be an arbitrary graph. As opposed to the Edge Intersection Graphs of Paths in an arbitrary graph which includes all graphs, we show that this is not true for ENP that is there exist some graphs which are not ENP. We also show that the class ENP coincides with the family of graphs of Edge-Intersecting and Non-Splitting Paths in a Grid (ENPG). Following similar studies for EPG graph class, we study the implications of restricting the number of bends of the individual paths in the grid. We show that restricting the number of bends also restricts the graph class. More concretely, by restricting the number of bends one gets an infinite sequence of classes such that every class is properly included in the next one. In particular, we show that one bend ENPG graphs are properly included in two bend ENPG graphs. In addition, we show that trees and cycles are one bend ENPG graphs, and characterize split graphs and co-bipartite graphs that are one bend ENPG. We prove that the recognition problem of one bend ENPG graphs is NP-complete even in a very restricted subclass of split graphs. Last, we provide a linear time recognition algorithm for one bend ENPG co-bipartite graphs.

## ÖZET

## KENAR KESİŞEN VE AYRILMAYAN YOLLARIN ÇİZGELERİ

Bu çalışmada yeni bir çizge sımıfı olan kenar-kesişen ve ayrılmayan yollar (ENP) çizge sınıfını sunuyor ve çalışıyoruz. İlk önce, özel ama nispeten doğal bir durum olan evsahibi çizgenin bir ağaç olduğu bir ağaçta kenar-kesişen ayrılmayan yollar (ENPT) durumunu ele aldık. Temel ve önemli yaplar olan kirişsiz halkaların ENPT gösterimini çalıştık. Özel bir varsayım altında tekil enküçük gösterimi dönen bir algoritma verdik. Ancak gösterdik ki bu problem genel haliyle NP-zordur. Daha sonra daha problemi evsahibi çizgenin herhangi bir çizge olabildiği durum ile genelleştirdik. Herhangi bir evsahibi çizgede yer alan kenar-kesişimli yollar tüm çizgeleri içerse de, gösterdik ki bu durum ENP için doğru değildir. EPG çizge sınıfı için yapılan çalışmalara paralel olarak yolların ızgaradaki bükülme sayısını kısıtlamanın etkilerini çalıştık. Somut olarak, bükülme sayısının kısıtlanması ile birbirini tam olarak içeren sonsuz çizge sınıfları dizesi vardır. Tek bükümlü ENPG çizge sınıfının çift bükümlü çizge sınıfının tam olarak içerildiğini gösterdik. Ayrıca gösterdik ki ağaçlar ve halkaların tek bükümlü ENPG'dir. Yarık (split) ve bütün-ikikümeli (co-bipartite) çizgelerin tek bükümlü ENPG gösterimlerini karakterize ettik. Tek bükümlü ENPG tanıma probleminin yarık çizge sınıfıyla sınırlandırıldığı durumda bile zor olduğunu kanıtladık. Son olarak tek bükümlü ENPG bütün-ikikümeli çizgeler için doğrusal zamanlı bir tanıma algoritması verdik.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ..... iii
ABSTRACT ..... V
ÖZET ..... vi
LIST OF FIGURES ..... ix
LIST OF SYMBOLS ..... xii
LIST OF ACRONYMS/ABBREVIATIONS ..... xiii

1. INTRODUCTION ..... 1
1.1. Motivating applications ..... 3
1.2. Literature Survey ..... 7
1.3. Structure of the thesis ..... 8
2. PRELIMINARIES ..... 10
2.1. General Definitions ..... 10
2.2. The EPT and ENPT graphs ..... 13
3. GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING PATHS IN A TREE ..... 15
3.1. Overview ..... 15
3.2. Preliminaries ..... 18
3.2.1. EPT Graphs ..... 19
3.2.2. Some ENPT graphs ..... 21
3.3. Basic Properties of EPT, ENPT Pairs ..... 23
3.4. Pairs $(G, C)$ Satisfying $(P 1),(P 2)$ and $(P 3)$ ..... 28
3.4.1. The pair $\left(G, C_{4}\right)$ ..... 28
3.4.2. Weak Dual Trees ..... 29
3.4.3. The Minimal Representation ..... 32
3.5. Pairs $(G, C)$ Satisfying ( $P 2$ ) and ( $P 3$ ) ..... 39
3.5.1. Contraction of Pairs ..... 40
3.5.2. Small Cycles: the pairs $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ and $\left(G, C_{6}\right)$ ..... 46
3.5.3. The General Case ..... 48
3.6. Pairs $(G, C)$ Satisfying (P3) ..... 53
3.6.1. Representations of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ and Small Cycles ..... 53
3.6.2. Intersection of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs and Aggressive Contraction ..... 61
3.6.3. Algorithm ..... 63
3.7. General Pairs $(G, C)$ ..... 67
4. GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING PATHS IN A GRID ..... 73
4.1. Overview ..... 73
4.2. Definitions and Notations ..... 74
4.3. ENP ..... 76
4.4. $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG ..... 81
5. GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING ONE BEND PATHS IN A GRID ..... 92
5.1. Overview ..... 92
5.2. Prelimineries ..... 93
5.3. Split Graphs ..... 95
5.3.1. Characterization of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG Split Graphs ..... 96
5.3.2. Two Consequences of The Characterization of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG Split Graphs ..... 99
5.3.3. NP-completeness of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph recognition ..... 101
5.4. Cobipartite Graphs ..... 104
5.4.1. Characterization of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG Co-bipartite Graphs ..... 104
5.4.2. Efficient Recognition Algorithm ..... 113
6. CONCLUSIONS ..... 118
REFERENCES ..... 121

## LIST OF FIGURES

Figure 1.1. The gain obtained by grooming $n$ requests of length $l_{1}, l_{2}, l_{3}, \ldots l_{n}$ into a lightpath of length $L$. ..... 5
Figure 2.1. A set of paths in an arbitrary graph. ..... 14
Figure 3.1. (a) The EPT representation of a $C_{12}$, (b) a simple ENPT repre- sentation of a $C_{12}$ (c) a broken planar tour with cherries represen- tation of a $C_{12}$, (d) a non-planar tour representation of a $C_{12}$, (e) a non-tour representation of a $C_{10}$ ..... 15
Figure 3.2. The representation of EPT cycle; a pie. ..... 20
Figure 3.3. (a) A minimal representation of $C_{4}$, (b) a minimal representation of $C_{5}$ (c) a tour representation of the even hole $C_{10}$, (d) a represen- tation of the odd hole $C_{11}$. ..... 22
Figure 3.4. The general pair recognition problem. ..... 27
Figure 3.5. The pair recognition problem under assumption ( $P 3$ ). ..... 27
Figure 3.6. The two minimal ENPT representations of $C_{4}$. ..... 29
Figure 3.7. Adjacent holes of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ are mapped to different centers. ..... 33
Figure 3.8. (a), (b), (c), (d) An induction step of the proof of Lemma 3.15 illustrated for $d=5$, (e) The unique minimal representation of $(G, C)$ satisfying ( $P 3$ ) obtained by combining the subtrees and the paths of the segments with a representation of a hole $H_{u}$. ..... 37
Figure 3.9. BuildPlanarTour $(G, C)$ algorithm. ..... 39
Figure 3.10. A pair $(G, C)$, its weak dual tree $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ and the representation of $(G, C)$ returned by BuildPlanarTour. ..... 40
Figure 3.11. Possible minifying operations on $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$. ..... 45
Figure 3.12. (a) The unique ENPT representation of $C_{5}$ satisfying ( $P 2$ ) and (b) corresponding pair $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$. ..... 47
Figure 3.13. FindMinRep-P2-P3 $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ algorithm. ..... 50Figure 3.14. The effect of union and minifying operations, and the reversal ofthis effect by Procedure AdjustEndpoint (invoked with $p=i$ ).51
Figure 3.15. Representations of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs where $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i}+3\right)=\{u, v\}$ and $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i}+3\right) \subsetneq\{u, v\}$, respectively ..... 56
Figure 3.16. The unique $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ pair that does not satisfy $(P 2)$ and its unique minimal representation ..... 57
Figure 3.17. A minimal representation of a pair $(G, C)$ with an induced $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ with $N_{G}(i+1)=K$. ..... 60
Figure 3.18. Proof of Lemma 3.37. ..... 62
Figure 3.19. Aggressive contraction of a single $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$, ..... 64
Figure 3.20. Aggressive contraction of twins. ..... 64
Figure 3.21. FindMinimalRep-P3( $\left.G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ algorithm. ..... 66
Figure 3.22. Proof of Lemma 3.40. ..... 69
Figure 3.23. A graph $H$, the corresponding pair $(G, C)$ and the component graph $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ where $K=\left\{u_{i, k}^{\prime}, u_{k}^{\prime}: 0<k<m, i \in e_{k}\right\}$. ..... 71
Figure 3.24. A representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of a pair $(G, C)$ corresponding to some 3-colorable graph $H$. ..... 72
Figure 4.1. Getting a representation with at most $8 n$ quiet segments in the proof of Theorem 4.5. Whenever there are 3 segments on one side of the closed trail, the middle one can be bypassed. ..... 79
Figure 4.2. The gadget used in the second transformation in the proof of The- orem 4.6. ..... 81
Figure 4.3. $\quad \mathrm{A}_{(6 x+1)}$-ENPG representation of the graph $\mathrm{PM}_{\left(6 x^{2}+5 x-3\right)}$ for $x=$ 3. The solid and dotted lines represent the union of the paths corresponding to two cliques. The individual paths are intentionally omitted but described in detail in Figure 4.4. ..... 82
Figure 4.4. The paths terminating at segment $i$. ..... 83
Figure 4.5. The structure of the path $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{S}^{\prime}$ in the proof of Lemma 4.12. ..... 88
Figure 5.1. (a) $\mathrm{A}_{1}$ - EPG representation of $C_{4}$, (b) a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$ - EPG representation of $C_{11}$. ..... 94
Figure 5.2. A construction for $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of trees. ..... 95
Figure 5.3. The representation of a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph. ..... 98

Figure 5.4. The $\mathrm{B}_{2}$-ENPG representation of a non- $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph described in the proof of Theorem 5.5. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 101
Figure 5.5. Two path sets $\mathcal{P}_{u}, \mathcal{P}_{v}$ meet at a path $S$ with endpoints $u$ and $v$. . 105
Figure 5.6. Two types of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of connected co-bipartite graphs: (a) Type I: $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=1, \cup \mathcal{P}$ is isomorphic to a tree $T$ with $\Delta(T) \leq 3$ and at most two vertices $u, v$ having degree 3 , (b) Type II: $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=2, \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) has exactly two bend points $u, v$ (resp. $\left.u^{\prime}, v^{\prime}\right)$.108

Figure 5.7. (a) Four special paths which are corresponding to a zed (b) The type of vertices and edge relations of a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG cobipartite graph having a Type I representation. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 111

Figure 5.8. $\quad \mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\cap$ Co-bipartite Recognition Algorithm. . . . . . . . . . 116

## LIST OF SYMBOLS

| $\left\{x_{1}, x_{2}, \ldots,\right\}$ | set of size $k$ |
| :--- | :--- |
| $\|A\|$ | cardinality of set $A$ |
| $A \subset B$ | $A$ is a subset of $B$ |
| $A \subsetneq B$ | $A$ is a subset of $B$ and $A \neq B$ |
| $\mathcal{C}_{n n}$ | The set of all cobipartite graphs |
| $G(V, E)$ | A graph with a vertex set $V$ and an edge set $E$ |
| $v$ | A vertex |
| $e$ | An edge |
| $P$ | A path |
| $C$ | A cycle |
| $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ | A set of paths $P$ defined on a host graph $H$ |
| $\left(\mathrm{G}, \mathrm{G}{ }^{\prime}\right)$ | A pair of graph where $G$ and $G^{\prime}$ are an EPT graph and an |
| $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ | ENPT graph respectively |
| $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ | An outerplanar graph of a pair $(G, C)$ |
|  | The weak dual tree of an outerplanar graph $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ |

## LIST OF ACRONYMS/ABBREVIATIONS

| EP | Graphs of Edge Intersection of Paths |
| :--- | :--- |
| EPT | Graphs of Edge Intersection of Paths in a Tree |
| EPG | Graphs of Edge Intersection of Paths in a Grid |
| VPT | Graphs of Vertex Intersection of Paths in a Tree |
| ENPT | Graphs of Edge Intersecting Non Splitting Paths in a Tree |
| ENPG | Graphs of Edge Intersecting Non Splitting Paths in a Grid |
| $B_{k}-$ EPG | Graphs of Edge Intersection of $k$-bend Paths in a Grid |
| $B_{k}$-ENPG | Graphs of Edge Intersecting Non Splitting of $k$-bend Paths in |
|  | a Grid |

## 1. INTRODUCTION

Good planning in business is crucial since production costs, service quality etc. are all determined by the execution of the plans. Moreover, planning becomes more and more challenging as the supply chain systems grow. At some point, human intuition and computational power fail to find good plans. In fact, these challenging problems (e.g. production planning, fleet management, workforce management and supply chain management) can be modeled as a mathematical problem which enables us to solve these problems using computers thus with more computational power.

Modeling is an abstraction of the real-life and graphs are one of the abstraction tools in mathematics. Graphs are mathematical structures able to model pairwise relations between objects and graph theory is the study of graphs. Graphs can be used to model many types of relations and processes in physical, social and information systems. Many practical problems (production scheduling, job assignment etc) can be represented by graphs and modeled as a graph optimization problems. Some fundamental graph optimization problems are: maximum matching, maximum flow, maximum clique, maximum independent set, minimum coloring etc. Unfortunately efficient algorithms are not known for many of the graph optimization problems. Of course the efficiency of an algorithm has a precise definition in computer science, we can however simply say that an algorithm is efficient if it terminates correctly in a reasonable time, i.e. the running time of the algorithm is a polynomial of the input size. A problem for which most probably no efficient algorithm exists is technically called NP-hard.

Considering special cases of a problem is one of the approaches to cope with NP-hardness. A typical example is restricting a graph optimization problem to a special graph class where a graph class is usually defined by some structural property. Structural graph theory deals with the characterization of various properties of graphs in order to use them in the design of efficient algorithms. In the literature, hundreds of graph classes are introduced and studied. Some classical graph classes are: trees,
bipartite graphs, interval graphs and planar graphs. There exist efficient optimization algorithms (for NP-complete problems) for these graph classes. There are many ways of defining a graph class. For example bipartite graphs are graphs whose vertex set can be partitioned into two independent sets. They are equivalently defined as (odd cycle)-free graphs. Trees are connected cycle-free graphs, or equivalently graphs in which any two vertices are connected by a unique path. These characterizations play a fundamental role for designing efficient algorithms. The main tools in structural graph theory are (i) detecting forbidden substructures and (ii) describing decomposition methods of graphs enabling to design divide-and-conquer algorithms.

Intersection graphs are graphs defined by intersection of a collection of objects, i.e. objects are represented by vertices and an edge between two vertices exists if the corresponding objects intersect. Any graph can be seen as an intersection graph by considering the set of edges incident to each vertex as objects. However, the intersection of geometric objects (e.g. intervals, disks, rectangles) defines graph classes that are used to model real-life applications. Similarly some interesting graph classes are defined by the intersection of graph theoretic objects such as trees and paths. For example, the well-known graph class of triangulated graphs coincides with the intersection graphs of subtrees of a tree. Motivated by applications in telecommunication networks, the Edge Intersection Graphs of Paths in a Tree (resp. in a Grid) EPT (resp. EPG) are also well studied graphs in the literature.

We say that two paths are splitting (and we call the corresponding edges red) if their union is not a path/cycle, otherwise two paths do not split from each other (and we call the corresponding edges blue). In some sense, we color the edges of EPT (or EPG) graphs such that the edges now contain an extra information which can be useful in some applications. In this work, we introduce and study a new graph class: Graphs of Edge-Intersecting Non-Splitting Paths (ENP) which are essentially the graphs consisting of only blue edges.

### 1.1. Motivating applications

We continue by presenting some applications which motivate the study of these graph classes.

EPT graphs have applications in communication networks. Consider a communication network of a tree topology $T$. The message routes to be delivered in this communication network are paths on $T$. Two paths conflict if they both require the use of the same link. This conflict model is equivalent to an EPT graph. Suppose we try to find a schedule for the messages such that no two messages sharing a link are scheduled in the same time interval. Then a vertex coloring of the EPT graph corresponds to a feasible schedule on this network.

EPT graphs also appear in all-optical telecommunication networks. The so-called Wavelength Division Multiplexing (WDM) technology can multiplex different signals onto a single optical fiber by using different wavelength ranges of the laser beam [1, 2]. WDM is a promising technology enabling us to deal with the massive growth of traffic in telecommunication networks, due to applications such as video-conferencing, cloud computing and distributed computing [3]. A stream of signals traveling from its source to its destination in optical form is called a lightpath. A lightpath is realized by signals traveling through a series of fibers, on a certain wavelength. Specifically, Wavelength Assignment problems (WLA) are a family of path coloring problems that aim to assign wavelengths (i.e. colors) to lightpaths, such that no two lightpaths with a common link receive the same wavelength and a certain objective function (depending on the problem) is minimized.

In optical networks, regenerators have to be placed on lightpaths in order to amplify (regenerate) the signal. Traffic Grooming is the term used for the combination of several low capacity requests (modeled by paths of a network) into one lightpath (modeled by a path or cycle of the network) using Time Division Multiplexing (TDM) technology [4]. Traffic grooming decreases the required number of regenerators since requests in the same lightpath share the same regenerators. In this context a set of
paths can be combined into one lightpath, as long as they satisfy the following two conditions:

- The load condition: On any given fiber, at most $g$ requests can use the same lightpath, where $g$ is an integer called the grooming factor.
- The no-split condition: a lightpath (i.e. the union of the requests using the lightpath) constitutes a path or a cycle of the network.

Clearly, the second condition cannot be checked in the EPT model. For this reason, we introduce ENPT graphs that provide the required information.

Readers unfamiliar with optical networks may consider the following analogous problem in transportation. Consider a set of transportation requests modeled by paths, and trucks traveling along paths or cycles. Trucks are able to load and drop items during their journey as long as at any given time their load does not exceed their capacity. The no-split condition reflects the fact that a truck has to follow a path or a cycle.

By the no-split condition, a (feasible) traffic grooming corresponds (in graph theoretical terms) to a vertex coloring of the graph consisting of red edges (EPT $\backslash$ ENPT). Moreover, by the load condition, every color class induces a sub-graph of an EPT graph with its clique number at most $g$. Therefore, it makes sense to analyze the structure of these graph pairs (EPT and ENPT).

Under this setting one can consider various objective functions such as:

Minimize the number of wavelengths / trucks. When the number of wavelengths (resp. trucks) is scarce, one aims to minimize this number. We note that when the parameter $g$ is sufficiently big (i.e. $g=\infty$ and resp. no capacity constraint for trucks) the problem boils down to the minimum vertex coloring problem of the graph consisting of red edges. Note that in the transportation case, we assume that disjoint itineraries


Figure 1.1. The gain obtained by grooming $n$ requests of length $l_{1}, l_{2}, l_{3}, \ldots l_{n}$ into a lightpath of length $L$.
can be traveled by the same truck.

Minimize the number of regenerators / total distance traveled. The signal traveling on a lightpath has to be regenerated along its way, implying a regeneration cost roughly proportional to its length [5] (similarly, a truck incurs operational expenses proportional to the distance it travels). The problem of minimizing the number of regenerators is equivalent to maximizing the gain obtained by grooming requests. By definition, the gain obtained by grooming the requests is equal to the length of these requests minus the length of the lightpath, see Figure 1.1. If $g=\infty$ then we can assume that no path is included in another path since such paths do not increase the cost (the length of a lightpath); indeed we can omit such paths during the optimization process and add them afterwards. In such a setting, the requests of a lightpath have an order according to their (both left and right) endpoints.

Observation 1.1. Let $\sigma$ be the increasing order of the endpoints of requests of a lightpath. The gain obtained by grooming these requests is equal to the sum of the overlaps of each two consecutive requests in $\sigma$.

In order to model this problem in graph theoretical terms, one has to assign weights to the ENPT edges indicating the length of the overlap of two non-splitting requests. Any feasible solution corresponds to a partition of the vertex set of ENPT (equivalently the vertices of EPT) into sets $V_{1}, \ldots V_{k}$, called blue components, such that the ENPT graph induced by $V_{i}$ is connected and its clique number is less than $g$, and
the EPT graph induced by $V_{i}$ is empty. Note that these blue components correspond to some collection of paths whose union is still a path.

Observation 1.2. The gain corresponding to a blue component is equal to the heaviest (in terms of weight) path in that component.

Sketch of Proof. First note that every path of a blue component corresponds to an ordering of the requests (corresponding to the vertices of that blue component). Consider a blue component and its corresponding requests, and number them according to the increasing orders of their endpoints. From Observation 1.1, it follows that the gain is equal to the sum of the overlaps of each two consecutive requests. It is enough to show that this sum is the maximum (heaviest) among all possible orders of requests. Let $\sigma$ is the ordering corresponding to the heaviest path of the blue component. Suppose $\sigma$ is not equal to the increasing order. Consider the smallest $i$ such that $\sigma(i+1)=i+k$, $k>1$. Let $\sigma^{\prime}$ be the order obtained by swapping $i+1$ and $i+k$ in $\sigma$. One can easily checked that $\sigma^{\prime}$ also corresponds to a heavier path in the blue component, a contradiction.

In [5], it is shown (under the assumption $g=\infty$ ) that a greedy algorithm, in which the paths are merged in decreasing order of their overlaps, is an optimal algorithm. Consider a set of requests in a tree yielding a pair of EPT and ENPT graphs. We can simulate the greedy algorithm in this (ENPT, EPT) pair in the following fashion: contract an edge having the maximum weight to a vertex. After this operation parallel edges will possibly appear, replace them with the following rule: if there is a red edge replace parallel edges with that red edge otherwise replace them with the edge having maximum weight. This greedy algorithm is optimal if we assume that the host graph is a tree and $g=\infty$. Our motivation to study the structural properties of related graph classes is to enrich the collection of tools to solve further applications.

### 1.2. Literature Survey

The related graph class EPT has been extensively studied in the literature. It is shown that recognizing EPT is NP-complete [6]. Similarly, the minimum vertex coloring problem remains NP-complete in EPT graphs [6]. In contrast, one can solve in polynomial time the maximum clique problem [6]. The basic idea is to show that there are two types of cliques and therefore the maximal cliques can be enumerated in polynomial time by a graph search on the host tree. The problem can be solved in polynomial time even if the representation is not available using a clique enumeration algorithm [7] since the number of maximal cliques is polynomial.

In [8] Tarjan proposes a decomposition algorithm, "decomposition by clique separators", which is applicable to EPT graphs; this approach is used to solve the maximum independent set problem in polynomial time. The main idea is to find at each iteration a clique whose removal separates at least two connected components. Tarjan calls an atom a subgraph which is not decomposable. This decomposition can be represented by a tree. He describes how to form recursively a solution at some parent node given the optimal solutions of its children. Therefore if we can solve a problem in polynomial time in the atoms then we can solve it in polynomial time in the whole graph. This approach works in EPT graphs mainly because of the following observation. Let $T$ be the host tree and $e$ an edge of $T$. The removal of $e$ divides $T$ into two trees $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$. We can partition the set of paths into three: (i) the paths sharing the edge $e$ which constitutes a clique (ii) the set of paths completely in $T_{1}$ (iii) and the set of paths completely in $T_{2}$. The later two sets are disjoint and therefore the atoms of EPT graphs have a very specific structure.

After these studies on EPT graphs in the early 80 's, this topic neglected until very recently. The studies of Golumbic et al. [9,10] compare various intersection graphs of paths in a tree and their relation to chordal and weakly chordal graphs. Also, some tolerance model is studied via $k$-edge intersection graphs where two vertices are adjacent if their corresponding paths intersect on at least $k$ edges [11].

Several recent papers consider the edge intersection graphs of paths on a grid (e.g [12]). Since all graphs are EPG (see [13]), studies focus mostly on the sub-classes of EPG where the paths have a limited number of bends. An EPG graph is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-EPG if it admits a representation in which every path has at most $k$ bends. The bend number of a graph $G$ is the minimum number $k$ such that $G$ has a $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-EPG representation. Clearly, a graph is $\mathrm{B}_{0}$-EPG if and only if it is an interval graph. $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-EPG graphs are studied in [13] in which every tree is shown to be $\mathrm{B}_{1}$ - EPG , and a characterization of $C_{4}$ representations is given. In [14] it is shown that there exists an outer-planar graph that is not a $B_{1}-E P G$. The recognition problem of $B_{1}-E P G$ graphs is shown to be NP-complete in [15]. The work [14] investigates the bend number of some special graph classes. In [16] the authors give a characterization of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$ - EPG graphs belonging to some subclasses of chordal graphs. It is shown in [17] that the minimum coloring and maximum independent problems remain NP-complete even in $\mathrm{B}_{1}$ - EPG and provide in the same paper a 4-approximation algorithm for both problems assuming that the representation is given.

### 1.3. Structure of the thesis

Chapter 2 contains a brief list of graph-theoretical definitions and notations essential to the rest of the thesis.

Chapter 3 explores different ENPT representations of cycles which are simple yet important structures in graph theory. We observe that there can be multiple representations for the same cycle therefore we also consider the underlying EPT graph and call them a pair. We propose a pair recognition problem. We define three properties and we characterize the pairs and the corresponding representations (under some minimality definition) satisfying these properties. Then, we relax the properties one by one and provide each time a recognition algorithm except for the last property. Finally, we present an NP-completeness proof for the general pair recognition problem (if we don't assume the last property holds).

Chapter 4 covers the generalization of the host graph from a tree to an arbitrary
graph, namely ENP graphs. We start with two important theorems, showing that not all graphs are ENP and the graph classes ENP and ENPG are equivalent. Therefore, it is sufficient to consider without loss of generality ENPG graphs. As in the case of EPG graphs, we consider the graphs having representation on the grid where the paths have at most $k$ bends, namely $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG graphs. We analyze the inclusion of graph classes $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG parametrized by $k$.

Chapter 5 deals with the case $k=1$. We present some basic results showing that all trees and cycles are $B_{1}$-ENPG. We then consider two subclasses $B_{1}$-ENPG split and $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG cobipartite graphs. We show that the recognizing $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split is NP-complete whereas decide whether a given cobipartite graph is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG is decidable in polynomial time.

Chapter 6 summarizes the main results and proposes some future research directions.

## 2. PRELIMINARIES

In this chapter we will consider some notions essential for the understanding of the thesis. We start with basic graph terminology, followed by basic definitions for EPT and ENPT graphs. For the omitted definitions and notations see [18].

### 2.1. General Definitions

A graph is an ordered pair $(V, E)$ where $E \subseteq V \times V . V$ is the vertex (or node) set and $E$ is the edge set of $G$. We assume throughout this work that graphs are undirected and simple (no loops and multiple edges). We say that two vertices $u \in V, v \in V$ are adjacent in $G$ if $u v \in E$. Given a graph $G=(V, E)$ and a vertex $v$ of $V$, we denote by $\delta_{G}(v)$ the set of edges of $G$ incident to $v$, by $N_{G}(v)$ the set consisting of $v$ and its neighbors (the vertices adjacent to $v$ ) in $G$, and by $d_{G}(v)=\left|\delta_{G}(v)\right|$ the degree of $v$ in $G$. Whenever there is no ambiguity we omit the subscript $G$ and write $d(v), \delta(v)$ and $N(v)$. We call a vertex $v$ isolated if $d(v)=0$. Given a graph $G=(V, E)$ and a subset $V^{\prime} \subseteq V$, $H=\left(V^{\prime}, E^{\prime}\right)$ is the (induced) subgraph of $G$ induced by $V^{\prime}$ where $E^{\prime} \subseteq E$ is the set of edges whose both endpoints are in $V^{\prime}$. Given a graph $G=(V, E), \bar{V} \subseteq V$ and $\bar{E} \subseteq E$ we denote by $G[\bar{V}]$ and $G[\bar{E}]$ the subgraphs of $G$ induced by $\bar{V}$ and by $\bar{E}$, respectively. For a graph $G=(V, E), \bar{G}=(V, \bar{E}=V \times V \backslash E)$ is its complement graph. The union of two graphs $G, G^{\prime}$ is the graph $G \cup G^{\prime} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(V(G) \cup V\left(G^{\prime}\right), E(G) \cup E\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right)$. The join $G+G^{\prime}$ of two disjoint graphs $G, G^{\prime}$ is the graph $G \cup G^{\prime}$ together with all the edges joining $V(G)$ and $V\left(G^{\prime}\right)$, i.e. $G+G^{\prime} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(V(G) \cup V\left(G^{\prime}\right), E(G) \cup E\left(G^{\prime}\right) \cup\left(V(G) \times V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right)\right)$. A path is a sequence of edges which connect a sequence of distinct vertices. We say that the length of a path is $k$ if it contains $k$ edges. A cycle is a sequence of adjacent vertices starting and ending at the same vertex. A cycle $C$ of a graph $G=(V, E)$ is Hamiltonian if $V(C)=V$. A graph is connected if there is a path between any pairs of vertices Two graphs $G$ and $H$ are isomorphic if there is a bijection $f$ from $V(G)$ to $V(H)$ such that $u v \in E(G)$ if and only if $f(u) f(v) \in E(H)$.

Given a graph, we call a subset of its vertices independent or stable (resp. a
clique) if no vertex in this subset has a neighbor in this subset. A set is maximal with respect to some property if it is not a subset of another set satisfying the property, i.e. the set cannot be expended with vertices without losing this property.

The maximum independent set (resp. clique) problem is the problem of finding a maximum cardinality independent set (resp. clique) in a given graph. The minimum vertex coloring problem consists in partitioning the vertices of a graph into a minimum number of independent sets. A graph is $k$-colorable if its vertices can be partitioned into $k$ independent sets.

A family of graphs (or a graph class) is a collection of graphs satisfying some specific property. Given a graph $G$ and a graph class $\mathcal{F}$, we call $\mathcal{F}$ recognition the problem of deciding whether $G$ belongs to $\mathcal{F}$ or not.

A tree is a connected graph that does not contain any cycles, we usually call the vertices of a tree as nodes. A subtree is an induced subgraph of a tree. We can make any tree rooted by choosing an arbitrary node as root node which introduces a parent-child relationship between the nodes. A node of a tree is called a leaf (resp. intermediate node, junction) if $d_{G}(v)=1$ (resp. $=2, \geq 3$ ). For two nodes $u, v$ of a tree $T$ we denote by $p_{T}(u, v)$ the unique path between $u$ and $v$ in $T$. A star denoted by $K_{1, k}$ is a tree consisting of one intermediate node and $k$ leaves. A star with 3 edges is called a claw.

A graph is bipartite (resp. co-bipartite, resp. split) if its vertex set can be partitioned into two independent sets (resp. two cliques, resp. a clique and an independent set). Note that these partitions are not necessarily unique. We denote bipartite, cobipartite and split graphs as $X\left(V_{1}, V_{2}, E\right)$ where
(i) $X=B$ (resp. $C, S$ ) whenever $G$ is bipartite (resp. cobipartite, split),
(ii) $V_{1} \cap V_{2}=\emptyset$,
(iii) for bipartite graphs $V_{1}, V_{2}$ are stable sets,
(iv) for co-bipartite graphs $V_{1}$ and $V_{2}$ are cliques,
(v) for split graphs $V_{1}$ is a clique and $V_{2}$ is a stable set, and
(vi) $E \subseteq V_{1} \times V_{2}$ (in other words $E$ does not contain the cliques' edges).

Unless otherwise stated, we assume that $G$ is connected and none of $V_{1}, V_{2}$ is empty.

An $n \times m$ grid graph $G_{n, m}=(V, E)$ where $V=[n] \times[m]$ and $(i, j)\left(i^{\prime}, j^{\prime}\right) \in E \Leftrightarrow$ $\left|i-i^{\prime}\right|+\left|j-j^{\prime}\right|=1$. A bend of a path $P$ in a grid $H$ is an internal point of $P$ whose edges have different directions, i.e. one vertical and one horizontal.

Given a graph $G$ and a cycle $C$ of it, a chord of $C$ in $G$ is an edge of $E(G) \backslash E(C)$ connecting two vertices of $V(C)$. The length of a chord connecting vertices $i, j$ is the length of a shortest path between $i$ and $j$ on $C$. $C$ is a hole (chordless cycle) of $G$ if $G$ does not contain any chord of $C$. This is equivalent to saying that the subgraph $G[V(C)]$ of $G$ induced by the vertices of $C$ is a cycle. For this reason a chordless cycle is also called an induced cycle.

A graph $G$ is chordal (resp. weakly chordal) if every cycle of $G$ (resp. $G$ and $\bar{G}$ ) of length at least 4 (resp. at least 5) has a chord.

Let $\mathcal{P}$ be a set of paths in a graph $H$. The graphs $\operatorname{Ep}(\mathcal{P})$ and $\operatorname{Enp}(\mathcal{P})$ are such that $V(\operatorname{Enp}(\mathcal{P}))=V(\operatorname{Ep}(\mathcal{P}))=V$, and there is a one-to-one correspondence between $\mathcal{P}$ and $V$, i.e. $\mathcal{P}=\left\{P_{v}: v \in V\right\}$. Given two paths $P_{u}, P_{v} \in \mathcal{P},\{u, v\}$ is an edge of $\operatorname{Ep}(\mathcal{P})$ if and only if $P_{u}$ and $P_{v}$ have a common edge, whereas $\{u, v\}$ is an edge of $\operatorname{Enp}(\mathcal{P})$ if and only if $P_{u} \sim P_{v}$. Clearly, $E(\operatorname{Enp}(\mathcal{P})) \subseteq E(\operatorname{Ep}(\mathcal{P}))$. A graph $G$ is ENP if there is a graph $H$ and a set of paths $\mathcal{P}$ of $H$ such that $G=\operatorname{Enp}(\mathcal{P})$. In this case $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is an ENP representation of $G$. When $H$ is a tree (resp. grid) $\operatorname{Ep}(\mathcal{P})$ is an EPT (resp. EPG) graph, and $\operatorname{Enp}(\mathcal{P})$ is an ENPT (resp. ENPG) graph; these graphs are denoted also as $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P}), \operatorname{Epg}(\mathcal{P}), \operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ and $\operatorname{Enpg}(\mathcal{P})$. We say that two representations are equivalent if they are representations of the same graph.

Let $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation of an ENP graph $G . \mathcal{P}_{e} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\{P \in \mathcal{P} \mid e \in P\}$ denotes the set of trails of $\mathcal{P}$ containing the edge $e$ of $H$. For a subset $S \subseteq V(G)$
we define $\mathcal{P}_{S} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{P_{v} \in \mathcal{P}: v \in S\right\}$. When $H$ is a tree (resp. grid) $\operatorname{Ep}(\mathcal{P})$ is an $\operatorname{EPT}$ (resp. EPG) graph, and $\operatorname{EnP}(\mathcal{P})$ is an ENPT (resp. ENPG) graph; these graphs are denoted also as $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P}), \operatorname{Epg}(\mathcal{P}), \operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ and $\operatorname{Enpg}(\mathcal{P})$.

Given two paths $P=\left(e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{\ell}\right)$ and $P^{\prime}=\left(e_{1}^{\prime}, e_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots, e_{\ell^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right)$, a segment of $P \cap P^{\prime}$ is a maximal path that constitutes a sub-path of both $P$ and $P^{\prime}$. Clearly, $P \cap P^{\prime}$ is the union of edge disjoint segments. We denote the set of these segments by $\mathcal{S}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$.

### 2.2. The EPT and ENPT graphs

For the following discussion we refer the reader to Figure 2.1. Given two paths $P, P^{\prime}$ in a graph, we write $P \| P^{\prime}$ to denote that $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ are non-intersecting, i.e. edge-disjoint. The split vertices of $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ is the set of junctions in their union $P \cup P^{\prime}$ and is denoted by $\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$. Whenever $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ intersect and $\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)=\emptyset$ we say that $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ are non-splitting and denote this by $P \sim P^{\prime}$. In this case $P \cup P^{\prime}$ is a path or a cycle. When $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ intersect and $\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right) \neq \emptyset$ we say that they are splitting and denote this by $P \nsim P^{\prime}$. Clearly, for any two paths $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ exactly one of the following holds: $P \| P^{\prime}, P \sim P^{\prime}, P \nsim P^{\prime}$. When the graph $G$ is a tree, the union $P \cup P^{\prime}$ of two intersecting paths $P, P^{\prime}$ on $G$ is a tree with at most two junctions, i.e. $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq 2$ and $P \cup P^{\prime}$ is a path whenever $P \sim P^{\prime}$. A vertex $w$ of a path $P$ that is not an endpoint of $P$ is called an internal vertex of $P$. We also say that $P$ crosses $w$. For an edge $e=\{p, q\}$ we use split $(e)$ as a shorthand for $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{p}, P_{q}\right)$. Throughout this work, in all figures, the edges of the tree $T$ of a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ are drawn as solid lines whereas the paths on the tree are shown by dashed, dotted, etc. edges.

For the following discussion please refer to Figure 2.1. The pairs of paths $\left(P_{2}, P_{4}\right)$ and $\left(P_{3}, P_{4}\right)$ do not share a common edge, therefore $P_{2} \| P_{4}$ and $P_{3} \| P_{4} . P_{1}$ and $P_{4}$ have a common edge 11,12 , and 12 is a common internal vertex constituting a split of $P_{1}$ and $P_{4}$, therefore $P_{1} \nsim P_{4}$. Similarly $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$ have three common edges and 10 is a split vertex of $P_{1}$ and $P_{3}$, therefore $P_{1} \nsim P_{3} . P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ have three common edges but no splits, then $P_{1} \sim P_{2}$. The same holds for the pair $\left(P_{2}, P_{3}\right)$. However, we note that in


Figure 2.1. A set of paths in an arbitrary graph.
the latter case the common edges are separated into two segments. The vertex 8 is not a split point of $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ because the only internal points of $P_{1}$ involving this vertex are $\left(e_{7,8}, 8, e_{7,9}\right),\left(e_{14,8}, 8, e_{8,15}\right)$, and the only internal point of $P_{2}$ involving it is $\left(e_{7,8}, 8, e_{7,9}\right)$. Moreover, $\left|\left\{e_{7,8}, e_{7,9}\right\} \cap\left\{e_{7,8}, e_{7,9}\right\}\right|=2 \neq 1$ and $\left|\left\{e_{7,8}, e_{7,9}\right\} \cap\left\{e_{14,8}, e_{7,15}\right\}\right|=0 \neq 1$.

When the graph $G$ is a tree, the union $P \cup P^{\prime}$ of two intersecting paths $P, P^{\prime}$ on $G$ is a tree with at most two junctions, i.e. $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq 2$ and $P \cup P^{\prime}$ is a path whenever $P \sim P^{\prime}$.

## 3. GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING PATHS IN A TREE

### 3.1. Overview

In this chapter, we consider Graphs of Edge-Intersecting Non-Splitting Paths in a Tree (ENPT). The results presented in this chapter are organized in several papers [19-21]. The host graph being a tree implies the host graph itself does not contain any cycle. However the corresponding ENPT graph can contain arbitrarily large cycles. We study ENPT representations of trees and cycles. For the later we show that they are more complex compared to EPT representations of cycles, see Figure 3.1. In Section 3.6, we showed that all ENPT representations satisfying the condition (P3), defined in Section 3.3, of a cycle have the form as in Figure 3.1c.

(a)

(b)

(c)

(d)

(e)

Figure 3.1. (a) The EPT representation of a $C_{12}$, (b) a simple ENPT representation of a $C_{12}$ (c) a broken planar tour with cherries representation of a $C_{12}$, (d) a non-planar tour representation of a $C_{12}$, (e) a non-tour representation of a $C_{10}$.

Our work in this section mainly follows the lines of Golumbic and Jamison's
research $[6,22]$ in which they defined the EPT graph class, and characterized the representations of chordless cycles (holes). It turns out that ENPT holes have a more complex structure than EPT holes. Even for a small cycle of length 4, we can observe that there are two different ENPT representations, however the corresponding EPT graphs are different, see Figure 3.6. For this reason, in our analysis, we assume that the EPT graph corresponding to a representation of an ENPT hole is given. We also introduce three assumptions $(P 1),(P 2),(P 3)$ defined on EPT, ENPT pairs of graphs.

In Section 3.2 we start with definitions and notations. We obtain in Section 3.3 some basic results regarding ENPT graphs, and their relationship with EPT graphs. We consider pairs of graphs $(G, C)$ where $C$ is a Hamiltonian cycle of $G$, such that $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P})=G$ and $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})=C$. Given a pair $(G, C)$ we call the problem of determining whether there is a minimal representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of $(G, C)$ as HamiltonianPairRec.

We introduce the properties $(P 1),(P 2)$ and $(P 3)$ under which, in Section 3.4, we characterize the representations of pairs in Theorem 3.19. It turns out that the unique minimal representation is a planar tour of the weak dual tree of $G$ where a planar tour of a tree is a collection of two types of paths; short (from a leaf to its parent) and long (from a leaf to another leaf consecutive in the cyclic permutation), see Figure 3.10.

In Section 3.5, we relax assumption ( $P 1$ ). We present basic results regarding the contraction operation and describe an algorithm for pairs satisfying assumptions $(P 2)$ and (P3). In Theorem 3.30, we showed that these representations are exactly broken planar tours where a broken tour is a representation obtained from a tour by subdividing edges and breaking apart some long paths. When a long path is broken apart into two paths, the non-leaf endpoint for each one of the two paths should be determined. We call this procedure AdjustEndpoint which is a subroutine in Algorithm FindMinimalRepresentation-P2-P3.

In Section 3.6, we aslo relax assumption ( $P 2$ ). We first characterize the representations of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ and call them cherries. We then provide in Theorem 3.33 a family of
graphs which does not belong to ENPT. It should be noted that non-ENPT graphs do not directly follow from their definition. Indeed showing that a given graph do not admit an ENPT representation requires the knowledge of some structural properties on ENPT. We define aggressive contraction operations, see Figures 3.19 and 3.20. Using these results, we present Algorithm FindMinimalRepresentation-P3 that returns the minimal representation of a given pair $(G, C)$ satisfying $(P 3)$ in polynomial-time.

In Section 3.7, we show that in general, i.e. in the case where assumption ( $P 3$ ) does not hold, there does not exist a polynomial-time algorithm that provides the minimal representation of a given pair $(G, C)$, unless $\mathrm{P}=\mathrm{NP}$. This result extends the NP-completeness result for EPT-recognition problem. More specifically EPTrecognition problem remains NP-complete even the edges of graphs corresponding to the splitting paths are labeled. The main difficulty originates from deciding whether a given clique is represented by an edge clique or a claw clique. The complexity of the recognition problem when this information is provided by an oracle is open. On the other hand, ENPT recognition in general is open. We showed that pair recognition is NP-complete however this result does not imply that ENPT recognition is NP-complete. Given an ENPT graph, the flexibility of choosing EPT edges in various ways might render the recognition problem polynomial-time solvable.

In Section 3.7, we provide a recognition algorithm for a pair satisfying ( $P 3$ ) and we characterize the representation of such pairs. However a stronger result is still missing: the characterization of pairs satisfying ( $P 3$ ), we achieve a partial result in Section 3.5 by characterizing pairs satisfying $(P 1),(P 2),(P 3)$.

We know that ENPT $\backslash$ EPT is not empty since the wheel graph on five vertices (a graph consisting of a cycle and a vertex adjacent to all vertices of this cycle) is an element of this set. However whether EPT $\nsubseteq$ ENPT is still open.

Optimization problems in EPT graphs is another interesting research direction. The clique enumeration algorithm described in [7] is output-sensitive. This means that the time complexity of the algorithm depend on the output, i.e. number of cliques.

As in the case of EPT graphs maximum clique problem is polynomial-time solvable in ENPT graphs with a clique enumeration algorithm since there are polynomial number of maximal cliques. Searching for a more efficient algorithm instead of this generic approach is another research topic. Independent set problem in EPT is polynomialtime solvable using Tarjan's decomposition by clique separators [8]. In this approach we recursively decompose the graph using a clique into two connected components. We call non-decomposable components as atoms. In the same paper Tarjan considers some fundamental problems, e.g. independent set, minimum vertex coloring and describe how to combine the solutions of these problems in the atoms to get a global solution. Therefore if one can solve a problem from this list efficiently in some graph class then this problem is polynomial-time solvable. Following this approach it is shown in the same paper that independent set problem in EPT graphs is polynomial-time solvable and there is a $\frac{3}{2}$-approximation algorithm for the minimum vertex coloring problem in the same graph class. Is there a special structure of the atoms of ENPT graphs? Probably not. Consider a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of an EPT graph. Since $T$ is a tree for any edge $e, e$ divides $T$ into two subtrees $T_{1}$ and $T_{2}$ and the set of paths into three sets: the set of paths containing $e$ (the corresponding vertices form a clique) and the set of paths in $T_{1} \backslash e$ and $T_{2} \backslash e$ (the corresponding vertices form two connected components). However this is not true for ENPT graphs. Consider a set of paths containing an edge $e$, note that the corresponding vertices do not necessarily form a clique. For this reason if we remove a clique we do not have necessarily two connected components. One research direction is to investigate decomposition algorithms for ENPT. On the other hand since ENPT is a partial graph of EPT an independent set of EPT is also an independent set of ENPT. Based on this fact, another interesting question is whether the maximum independent set problem remains polynomial in ENPT graphs.

### 3.2. Preliminaries

In this Section, we give necessary definitions, present known results related to our work, and develop basic results. In Section 3.2.1 we present known results on EPT graphs that are closely related to our work. In Section 3.2.2 we show that cycles, trees
and cliques are ENPT graphs.

### 3.2.1. EPT Graphs

We now present definitions and results from [6] that we use throughout this work.

Two graphs $G$ and $G^{\prime}$ such that $V(G)=V\left(G^{\prime}\right)$ and $E\left(G^{\prime}\right) \subseteq E(G)$ are termed a pair (of graphs) denoted as $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$. If $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P})=G$ (resp. $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})=G$ ) we say that $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is an EPT (resp. ENPT) representation for $G$. If $\operatorname{EpT}(\mathcal{P})=G$ and $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})=G^{\prime}$ we say that $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is a representation for the pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$. Given a pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ the sub-pair induced by $\bar{V} \subseteq V(G)$ is the pair ( $\left.G[\bar{V}], G^{\prime}[\bar{V}]\right)$. Clearly, any representation of a pair induces representations for its induced sub-pairs, i.e. the pairs have the hereditary property. We note that $e$ is a red edge if and only if $\operatorname{split}(e) \neq \emptyset$.

Given a (simple) graph $G$ and $e \in E(G)$, we denote by $G_{/ e}$ the (simple) graph obtained by contracting the edge $e$ of $G$, i.e. by coinciding the two endpoints of $e=\{p, q\}$ to a single vertex $p \cdot q$, and then removing loops and parallel edges. Let $\bar{E}=\left\{e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots e_{k}\right\} \subseteq E(G)$. We denote by $G_{/ e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}$ the graph obtained from $G_{/ e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k-1}}$ by contracting the (image of the) edge $e_{k}$. The effect of such a sequence of contractions is equivalent to contracting every connected component of $G\left[\left\{e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}\right\}\right]$ to a vertex. Therefore the order of contractions is not important, i.e. for any permutation $\pi$ of $\{1, \ldots, k\}$ we have $G_{/ e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k-1}}=G_{/ e_{\pi(1)}, \ldots, e_{\pi(k-1)}}$. Based on this fact, we denote by $G_{/ \bar{E}}$ the graph obtained by contracting the edges of $\bar{E}$ (in any order).

An outerplanar graph is a planar graph that can be embedded in the plane such that all its vertices are on the unbounded face of the embedding. An outerplanar graph is Hamiltonian if and only if it is biconnected; in this case the unbounded face forms the unique Hamiltonian cycle. The weak dual graph of a planar graph $G$ is the graph obtained from its dual graph, by removing the vertex corresponding to the unbounded face of $G$. The weak dual graph of an outerplanar graph is a forest, and in particular the weak dual graph of a Hamiltonian outerplanar graph is a tree [23]. When working with outerplanar graphs we use the term face to mean a bounded face.


Figure 3.2. The representation of EPT cycle; a pie.

A cherry of a tree $T$ is a connected subgraph of $T$ consisting of two leaves of $T$ adjacent to an internal vertex of $T$. Similarly a cherry of a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is a cherry of $T$ with leaves $v, v^{\prime}$ such that $v$ (resp. $v^{\prime}$ ) is an endpoint of exactly one path $P$ (resp. $P^{\prime}$ ) of $\mathcal{P}$, and $P \neq P^{\prime}$.

A pie of a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of an EPT graph is an induced star $K_{1, k}$ of $T$ with $k$ leaves $v_{0}, v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-1} \in V(T)$, and $k$ paths $P_{0}, P_{1}, \ldots P_{k-1} \in \mathcal{P}$, such that for every $0 \leq i \leq k-1$ both $v_{i}$ and $v_{(i+1) \bmod k}$ are vertices of $P_{i}$. We term the central vertex of the star as the center of the pie (See Figure 3.2). It is easy to see that the EPT graph of a pie with $k$ leaves is the hole $C_{k}$ on $k$ vertices. Moreover, this is the only possible EPT representation of $C_{k}$ when $k \geq 4$.

Theorem 3.1. [6] If an EPT graph contains a hole with $k \geq 4$ vertices, then every representation of it contains a pie with $k$ paths.

Let $\mathcal{P}_{e} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\{p \in \mathcal{P} \mid e \in p\}$ be the set of paths in $\mathcal{P}$ containing the edge $e$. A star $K_{1,3}$ is termed a claw. For a claw $K$ of a tree $T, \mathcal{P}[K] \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\{p \in \mathcal{P} \mid p$ uses two edges of $K\}$. It is easy to see that both $\operatorname{Ept}\left(\mathcal{P}_{e}\right)$ and $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P}[K])$ are cliques. These cliques are termed edge-clique and claw-clique, respectively. Moreover, these are the only possible representations of cliques.

Theorem 3.2. [6] Any maximal clique of an EPT graph with representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ corresponds to a subcollection $\mathcal{P}_{e}$ of paths for some edge e of $T$, or to a subcollection $\mathcal{P}[K]$ of paths for some claw $K$ of $T$.

Note that a claw-clique is a pie with 3 leaves.

### 3.2.2. Some ENPT graphs

In this section we show that trees, cycles and cliques are contained in the family of ENPT graphs, and give a complete characterization of the ENPT representations of cliques:

Lemma 3.3. Every clique $K$ of $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ corresponds to an edge-clique, such that the union of the paths representing $K$ is a path.

Proof. $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ is a subgraph of $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P})$. Therefore a clique $K$ of $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ is a clique of $\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P})$. Assume, by way of contradiction that $K$ does not correspond to an edge-clique. By Theorem 3.2, $K$ corresponds to either an edge-clique or a claw-clique. A claw-clique that is not an edge-clique, contains two paths $P_{p}, P_{q}$ each of which uses a different pair of the three edges of the claw. Therefore $P_{p} \nsim P_{q}$, i.e. $\{p, q\} \notin E(K)$, a contradiction. Therefore $K$ corresponds to an edge-clique. To show the second part of the claim, assume that the union of the paths corresponding to the vertices of $K$ is not a path. Then it contains at least one split vertex, i.e. it contains two paths $P_{p}, P_{q}$ such that $P_{p} \nsim P_{q}$, i.e. $\{p, q\} \notin E(K)$, a contradiction.

A direct consequence of Lemma 3.3 is that the maximum clique problem in ENPT graphs can be solved in polynomial time. Let $G$ be an ENPT graph and $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be an ENPT representation for $G$. Consider an edge $e$ of $T$, the union of paths in $\mathcal{P}_{e}$ induces a subtree $T_{e}$ of $T$. Let $l_{1}, l_{2}, \ldots, l_{k} \in V(T)$ be the leaves of $T_{e}$. Let $\mathcal{P}_{e}^{l_{i}, l_{j}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{P \in \mathcal{P}_{e} \mid P \subseteq p_{T}\left(l_{i}, l_{j}\right)\right\}$. The maximal cliques of $G$ correspond to the sets $\mathcal{P}_{e}^{l_{i}, l_{j}}$. Therefore, there are at most $O\left(V(T)^{3}\right)$ maximal cliques in $G$. We conclude that (even if a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is not given) a maximum clique can be found using a clique enumeration algorithm, e.g. [7], since there are only a polynomial number of maximal cliques.

Lemma 3.4. Every tree is an ENPT graph.

Proof. Given a tree $T^{\prime}$, the following procedure provides an ENPT representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of $\left.\left.T^{\prime}: 1\right) T \leftarrow T^{\prime}, 2\right)$ choose an arbitrary vertex $r$ as the root of $T$ and hang $T$ from $r, 3)$ add two vertices $\bar{r}, \overline{\bar{r}}$ and two edges $\{\overline{\bar{r}}, \bar{r}\}\{\bar{r}, r\}$ to $T, 4) \mathcal{P}=\left\{P_{v} \mid v \in T^{\prime}\right\}$ where $P_{v}$ is a path of length 2 between $v$ and its ancestor at distance 2. It remains to show that $\{u, v\} \in T^{\prime}$ if and only if $P_{u} \sim P_{v}$. Indeed, let $\{u, v\} \in T^{\prime}$, and assume without loss of generality that $u$ is the parent of $v$ in $T$. Then $P_{u}$ intersects $P_{v}$ because they both use the edge connecting $u$ to its parent. Moreover they do not split, because their union is the path from $v$ to its ancestor at distance 3. Therefore $P_{u} \sim P_{v}$. Conversely, assume that $P_{u} \sim P_{v}$. Then $P_{u}$ and $P_{v}$ intersect. As every vertex is a starting vertex of at most one path and the paths are of length 2 , the second edge of one of the paths, say $P_{v}$ is the first edge of $P_{u}$, therefore $u$ is the parent of $v$ in $T$, i.e. $\{u, v\} \in T^{\prime}$.

Let $T$ be a tree with $k$ leaves and $\pi=\left(\pi_{0}, \ldots, \pi_{k-1}\right)$ a cyclic permutation of the leaves. The tour $(T, \pi)$ is the following set of $2 k$ paths: $(T, \pi)$ contains $k$ long paths, each of which connecting two consecutive leaves $\pi_{i}, \pi_{i+1} \bmod k .(T, \pi)$ contains $k$ short paths, each of which connecting a leaf $\pi_{i}$ and its unique neighbor in $T$ (see Figure 3.3c). Note that $\operatorname{ENPT}((T, \pi))$ is a cycle.

b)

c)

d)

Figure 3.3. (a) A minimal representation of $C_{4}$, (b) a minimal representation of $C_{5}$ (c) a tour representation of the even hole $C_{10}$, (d) a representation of the odd hole $C_{11}$.

A planar embedding of a tour is a planar embedding of the underlying tree such that any two paths of the tour do not cross each other. A tour is planar if there exists a planar embedding of it. The tour in Figure 3.3c is a planar embedding of a tour. Note that a tour $(T, \pi)$ is planar if and only if $\pi$ corresponds to the order in which the leaves are encountered by some DFS traversal of $T$.

The opposite of a sequence of union operations that create one path is termed breaking apart. Namely, breaking apart a path $P$ is to replace it with paths $P_{1}, \ldots, P_{k}$ such that $\cup_{i=1}^{k} P_{i}=P, \forall 1 \leq i<k, P_{i} \cap P_{i+1} \neq \emptyset$, and $P_{i} \subseteq P_{j}$ if and only if $i=j$. A broken tour is a representation obtained from a tour by subdividing edges and breaking apart long paths of a tour. Clearly, if the tour is planar the broken tour is also planar, i.e. has a planar embedding.

Lemma 3.5. Every cycle $C_{k}$ is an ENPT graph.

Proof. $C_{3}=K_{3}$ is an ENPT graph by Lemma 3.3. As for $C_{4}$ and $C_{5}$, possible ENPT representations are shown in Figures 3.3a and 3.3b, respectively. Any even hole $C_{2 k}$, $(k \geq 3)$ is an ENPT graph. Indeed, for any tree $T$ with $k$ leaves, and a cyclic permutation $\pi$ of its leaves, the tour $(T, \pi)$ constitutes an ENPT representation of $C_{2 k}$. Any odd hole $C_{2 k+1},(k \geq 3)$ is an ENPT graph. Let $T$ be a tree with $k$ leaves. Split any long path of some tour $(T, \pi)$ into two intersecting sub-paths such that no chord is created (if necessary subdivide an edge of the tree into two edges) (see Figure $3.3 \mathrm{~d})$. The set of $2 k+1$ paths obtained in this way constitutes an ENPT representation for $C_{2 k+1}$.

### 3.3. Basic Properties of EPT, ENPT Pairs

In this section we develop the basic tools that we use in subsequent sections towards our goal of characterizing representations of ENPT, EPT pairs. We define an equivalence relation on representations, namely two representations will be equivalent in this relation if they are representations of the same pair. We also define a partial order on representations. In this work, we focus on finding representations that are minimal with respect to this partial order. We define the contraction operation on pairs, and the union operation on representations. The contraction operation is a restricted variant of graph contraction operation that operates on both graphs of a pair. The union operation is the operation of replacing two paths by their union whenever possible.

Equivalent and minimal representations. We say that the representations $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$ are equivalent, and denote it by $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \approx\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$, if their corresponding EPT and ENPT graphs are isomorphic under the same isomorphism (in other words, if they constitute representations of the same pair of graphs $\left.\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)\right)$.

We write $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \rightsquigarrow\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$ if $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$ can be obtained from $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle$ by one of the following two operations that we term minifying operations:

- Contraction of an edge $e$ of $T_{1}$ (and of all the paths in $\mathcal{P}_{1}$ using $e$ )
- Removal of an initial edge (tail) of a path in $\mathcal{P}_{1}$.

The partial order $\gtrsim$ is the reflexive-transitive closure of the relation $\rightsquigarrow$, and $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \lesssim\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$ is equivalent to $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle \gtrsim\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle .\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is a minimal representation if it is minimal in the partial order $\lesssim$ restricted to its equivalence class $[\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle] \approx$ i.e., over all the representations representing the same pair as $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Throughout the work we aim at characterizing minimal representations.

Lemma 3.6. Let $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \gtrsim\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$, and $s$ be a minimal sequence of minifying operations transforming $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle$ to $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$. Then every permutation of $s$ also transforms $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle$ to $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$.

Proof. If contract(e) is an operation of $s$ then there is no other operation in $s$ involving $e$. This is because such an operation is impossible after contract(e), and if it appears before contract $(e)$ it contradicts the minimality of $s$. To conclude the result, we observe that any two successive operations in $s$ are interchangeable. Indeed, for two distinct edges $e, e^{\prime}$ the operations contract $(e)$, contract ( $\left.e^{\prime}\right)$ (resp. contract $\left.(e), \operatorname{tr}\left(P, e^{\prime}\right)\right)$ are interchangeable, and for two not necessarily distinct edges $e, e^{\prime}$ the operations $\operatorname{tr}(P, e), \operatorname{tr}\left(P^{\prime}, e^{\prime}\right)$ are interchangeable.

Lemma 3.7. If $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \gtrsim \cdots \gtrsim\left\langle T_{n}, \mathcal{P}_{n}\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \approx\left\langle T_{n}, \mathcal{P}_{n}\right\rangle$, then $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \cong$ $\cdots \cong\left\langle T_{n}, \mathcal{P}_{n}\right\rangle$.

Proof. Let $G_{i}=\operatorname{Ept}\left(\mathcal{P}_{i}\right)$ and $G_{i}^{\prime}=\operatorname{Enpt}\left(\mathcal{P}_{i}\right)$. We observe that both minifying operations are monotonic in the sense that they neither introduce neither new intersections, nor new splits. Namely, for $1 \leq i<n, E\left(G_{i+1}\right) \subseteq E\left(G_{i}\right)$ and $E\left(G_{i+1}\right) \backslash E\left(G_{i+1}^{\prime}\right) \subseteq$ $E\left(G_{i}\right) \backslash E\left(G_{i}^{\prime}\right)$. As $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \cong\left\langle T_{n}, \mathcal{P}_{n}\right\rangle$ we have $\left(G_{1}, G_{1}^{\prime}\right)=\left(G_{n}, G_{n}^{\prime}\right)$, i.e. $E\left(G_{n}\right)=$ $E\left(G_{1}\right)$ and $E\left(G_{n}\right) \backslash E\left(G_{n}^{\prime}\right)=E\left(G_{1}\right) \backslash E\left(G_{1}^{\prime}\right)$. Therefore $E\left(G_{1}\right)=\cdots=E\left(G_{n}\right)$ and $E\left(G_{1}\right) \backslash E\left(G_{1}^{\prime}\right)=\cdots=E\left(G_{n}\right) \backslash E\left(G_{n}^{\prime}\right)$, concluding $\left(G_{1}, G_{1}^{\prime}\right)=\cdots=\left(G_{n}, G_{n}^{\prime}\right)$.

EPT Holes.

Lemma 3.8. A hole of size at least 4 of an EPT graph does not contain blue (i.e. ENPT) edges.

Proof. Consider the pie representing the hole under consideration. For any two paths $P_{p}, P_{q}$ of this pie, we have either $P_{p} \nsim P_{q}$ or $P_{p} \| P_{q}$, therefore $\{p, q\}$ is not an ENPT edge.

Combining with Theorem 3.1, we obtain the following characterization of pairs $\left(C_{k}, G^{\prime}\right)$ :

- $k>3$. In this case $C_{k}$ is represented by a pie. Therefore $G^{\prime}$ is an independent set. In other words $C_{k}$ consists of red edges. We term such a hole, a red hole.
- $k=3$ and $C_{k}$ consists of red edges ( $G^{\prime}$ is an independent set). We term such a hole a red triangle.
- $k=3$ and $C_{k}$ contains exactly one ENPT (blue) edge ( $G^{\prime}=P_{1} \cup P_{2}$ ). We term such a hole a $B R R$ triangle, and its representation is an edge-clique.
- $k=3$ and $C_{k}$ contains two ENPT (blue) edges $\left(G^{\prime}=P_{3}\right)$. We term such a hole a $B B R$ triangle, and its representation is an edge-clique.
- $k=3$ and $C_{k}$ consists of blue edges $\left(G^{\prime}=C_{3}\right)$. We term such a hole a blue triangle.

EPT contraction. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation and $P_{p}, P_{q} \in \mathcal{P}$ such that $P_{p} \sim$ $P_{q}$. We denote by $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/_{p}, P_{q}}$ the representation that is obtained from $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ by replacing the two paths $P_{p}, P_{q}$ by the path $P_{p} \cup P_{q}$, i.e. $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\langle T, \mathcal{P} \backslash\left\{P_{p}, P_{q}\right\} \cup\left\{P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right\}\right\rangle$. We term this operation a union, and note the following important property of split vertices with respect to the union operation:

Observation 3.9. For every $P_{p}, P_{q}, P_{r} \in \mathcal{P}$ such that $P_{p} \sim P_{q}$, split $\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}, P_{r}\right)=$ $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{p}, P_{r}\right) \cup \operatorname{split}\left(P_{q}, P_{r}\right)$.

Lemma 3.10. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation for the pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$, and let $e=\{p, q\} \in$ $E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$. Then $G_{/ e}$ is an EPT graph. Moreover $G_{/ e}=\operatorname{Ept}\left(\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}\right)$.

Proof. Let $s$ be the vertex of $G_{/ e}$ created by the contraction of $e$. We claim that $s$ corresponds to the path $P_{s}=P_{p} \cup P_{q}$. Consider a path $P_{r} \in \mathcal{P} \backslash\left\{P_{p}, P_{q}\right\}$. We observe that $\{r, s\} \in E\left(G_{/ e}\right) \Longleftrightarrow\{r, p\} \in E(G)$ or $\{r, q\} \in E(G)$ (by definition of the contraction operation) $\Longleftrightarrow P_{r}$ intersects with at least one of $P_{p}$ and $P_{q}$ in $T$ (because $G=\operatorname{EPT}(\mathcal{P})) \Longleftrightarrow P_{r}$ intersects $P_{p} \cup P_{q}=P_{s}$ in $T \Longleftrightarrow\{r, s\} \in$ $E\left(\operatorname{Ept}\left(\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}\right)\right)$.

We now extend the definition of the contraction operation to pairs. Based on Observation 3.9, the contraction of an ENPT edge does not necessarily preserve ENPT edges. More concretely, let $P_{p}, P_{q}$ and $P_{q^{\prime}}$ such that $P_{p} \sim P_{q}, P_{p} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}$ and $P_{q} \nsim P_{q^{\prime}}$. Then $G_{\mid p, q}^{\prime}$ is not isomorphic to $\operatorname{Enpt}\left(\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}\right)$ as $\left\{q^{\prime}, p . q\right\} \notin$ $E\left(\operatorname{Enpt}\left(\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}\right)\right)$. Let $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ be a pair and $e \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$. If for every edge $e^{\prime} \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$ incident to $e$, the edge $e^{\prime \prime}=e \triangle e^{\prime}$ (forming a triangle together with $e$ and $\left.e^{\prime}\right)$ is not an edge of $G$ then $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(G_{/ e}, G^{\prime} / e\right)$, otherwise $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ is undefined. Whenever $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ is defined we say that $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ is contractible on $e$, and when there is no ambiguity about the pair under consideration we say that $e$ is contractible. A pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ is contractible if it contains at least one contractible edge. Clearly, $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ is non-contractible if and only if every edge of $G^{\prime}$ is contained in at least one $B B R$ triangle.

HamiltonianPairRec
Input: A pair $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ where $C_{n}$ is a Hamiltonian cycle of $G$
Output: A minimal representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ if such a representation exists, "NO" otherwise.

Figure 3.4. The general pair recognition problem.

```
P3-HamiltonianPairRec
Input: A pair (G, C ) where C}\mp@subsup{C}{n}{}\mathrm{ is a Hamiltonian cycle of G and
n\geq4.
Output: A minimal representation }\langleT,\mathcal{P}\rangle\mathrm{ of (G, Cn) that satisfies
(P3) if such a representation exists, "NO" otherwise.
```

Figure 3.5. The pair recognition problem under assumption (P3).

Problem Definition. Our goal in this work is to characterize the representations of ENPT holes. More precisely we characterize representations of pairs $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ where $C_{n}$ is a Hamiltonian cycle of $G$. For this purpose we define the following problem.

The ENPT representations of $C_{3}$ are characterized by Lemma 3.3. Therefore we assume $n>3$, which implies that $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ does not contain blue triangles. In the sequel we confine ourselves to pairs $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ and representations $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ satisfying the following three assumptions:

- (P1): $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ is not contractible.
- ( $P 2$ ): $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ is $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$-free, i.e., it does not contain an induced sub-pair isomorphic to a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$.
- ( $P 3$ ): Every red triangle of $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ is a claw-clique, i.e. corresponds to a pie of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$.

Note that $(P 1)$ and $(P 2)$ are assumptions about the pair $(G, C)$ and $(P 3)$ is an assumption about the representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. We say that $(P 3)$ holds for a pair $(G, C)$ if it has a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ satisfying $(P 3)$. It will be convenient to define the following problem.

Without loss of generality we let $V(G)=V\left(C_{n}\right)=\{0,1, \ldots, n-1\}$ where the
numbering of the vertices is consistent with their order in $C$. All arithmetic operations on vertex numbers are done modulo $n$. We denote the corresponding set of paths in the representation as $\mathcal{P}=\left\{P_{0}, \ldots, P_{n-1}\right\}$.

### 3.4. Pairs $(G, C)$ Satisfying $(P 1),(P 2)$ and $(P 3)$

In this section we characterize the minimal representations of $(G, C)$ pairs satisfying $(P 1),(P 2)$ and $(P 3)$. To achieve this goal we present an algorithm solving the P3-HamiltonianPairRec problem for instances satisfying ( $P 1$ ) and ( $P 2$ ). In Section 3.4.1 we handle the case $n=4$. In Section 3.4.2 we analyze properties of weak dual trees based on which, in Section 3.4.3 we present an algorithm for the case $n>4$. $C_{4}$ is exceptional because all its representations satisfy assumptions ( $P 1-3$ ), but some of our results that we prove for $n>4$ fail to hold in this case.

### 3.4.1. The pair ( $G, C_{4}$ )

Lemma 3.11. (i) All the representations of $\left(G, C_{4}\right)$ satisfy assumptions ( $P 1-3$ ), (ii) $G$ is one of the two graphs in Figure 3.6, and (iii) each of these two graphs has a unique minimal representation (also depicted in Figure 3.6).

Proof. (i) ( $G, C_{4}$ ) is clearly $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$-free. Moreover it satisfies ( $P 3$ ) vacuously, because it does not contain any red triangle. $G \neq C_{4}$, because otherwise $C_{4}$ would constitute a blue hole of length 4 , contradicting Lemma 3.8. Without loss of generality let $\{1,3\}$ be a red edge of $G$. We observe that $\{1,3\}$ is incident to all the edges of $C_{4}$, therefore $\left(G, C_{4}\right)$ is not contractible, so it satisfies $(P 1)$.
(ii) Depending on whether or not $\{0,2\} \in E(G), G$ is one of the two graphs in Figure 3.6.
(iii) Consider a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of $\left(G, C_{4}\right)$, and consider the path $P=$ $P_{1} \cap P_{3}$. Let $e_{0}$ (resp. $e_{2}$ ) be an edge defining the edge-clique $\{1,3,0\}$ (resp. $\{1,3,2\}$ ).

Both of $e_{0}$ and $e_{2}$ are in $P$. Let $u \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right) . u$ is an endpoint of $P$. As $P_{0}$ intersects $P$ (at $e_{0}$ ), it can not cross $u$, because in this case it has to split from at least one of $P_{1}, P_{3}$ at $u$. The same holds for $P_{2}$. Therefore neither one of $P_{0}, P_{2}$ crosses a vertex of $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right)$. We consider two cases: (Case 1) $G$ is isomorphic to $K_{4}$. Then there is one edge defining the clique, i.e. without loss of generality $e_{0}=e_{2}$. If $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right)\right|=2$ then, none of these two vertices can be crossed by $P_{0}$ or $P_{2}$. Therefore $P_{0} \subseteq P$ and $P_{2} \subseteq P$, we conclude that they can not split, a contradiction. Therefore $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right)$ consists of one vertex that is not crossed by $P_{0}$ and $P_{2}$. We conclude that $P_{0}$ and $P_{2}$ cross the other endpoint of $P$ and split. The representation in Figure 3.6a is the only minimal representation satisfying these conditions. (Case 2) $G$ is not isomorphic to $K_{4}$. Therefore $e_{0} \neq e_{2}$, and without loss of generality $e_{0} \in P_{0} \backslash P_{2}, e_{2} \in P_{2} \backslash P_{0}$. $P$ has at least one endpoint $u$ in $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right)$. Without loss of generality $e_{0}$ is closer to $u$ than $e_{2}$. Therefore $P_{0}$ lies between $u$ and $e_{2}$, and $P_{2}$ starts after $P_{1}$ and crosses $e_{2}$. The representation in Figure 3.6b is the only minimal representation satisfying these conditions.


Figure 3.6. The two minimal ENPT representations of $C_{4}$.

### 3.4.2. Weak Dual Trees

We extend the definition of the weak dual tree of Hamiltonian outerplanar graphs to any Hamiltonian graph as follows. Given a pair $(G, C)$ where $C$ is a Hamiltonian cycle of $G$, a weak dual tree of $(G, C)$ is the weak dual tree $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ of an arbitrary Hamiltonian maximal outerplanar subgraph $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ of $G . \mathcal{O}(G, C)$ can be built by starting from $C$ and adding to it arbitrarily chosen chords from $G$ as long as such chords exist and the resulting graph is planar. We note that under the assumptions of
$(P 1-3), G$ will be shown to be outerplanar, and therefore there is actually one weak dual tree.

By definition of a dual graph, vertices of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ correspond to faces of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$. By maximality, the faces of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ correspond to holes of $G$. The degree of a vertex of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ is the number of red edges in the corresponding face of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$. To emphasize the difference, for an outerplanar graph $G$ we will refer to the weak dual tree of $G$, whereas for a (not necessarily outerplanar) graph $G$ we will refer to $a$ weak dual tree of $G$.

We proceed with observations on $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ :

- Edges of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ correspond to red edges of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ (by definition of a weak dual graph, and observing that the edges of the unbounded face are exactly the blue edges).
- The degree of a vertex of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ is the number of red edges in the corresponding face of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$, therefore the leaves (resp. intermediate vertices, junctions) of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ correspond to $B B R$ triangles (resp. $B R R$ triangles, red holes) of $(G, C)$ (recalling Lemma 3.8).
- $|V(G)|=|V(C)|=|E(C)|=2 \ell+i$ where $\ell$ is the number of leaves of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ and $i$ is the number of its intermediate vertices.

Lemma 3.12. Let $n>4$ and $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ be a pair satisfying $(P 1-3)$. Then every edge of $C_{n}$ is in exactly one $B B R$ triangle.

Proof. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation of $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ satisfying (P3). As $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ is not contractible, every edge of $C_{n}$ is in at least one $B B R$ triangle. Assume, by contradiction and without loss of generality, that the blue edge $\{1,2\}$ is part of the two possible $B B R$ triangles $\{0,1,2\}$ and $\{1,2,3\} .\{0,3\}$ is not an edge of $C_{n}$, because $n>4$. Moreover, it is not an edge of $G$, because otherwise the sub-pair induced by $\{0,1,2,3\}$ is isomorphic to a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. Let $e_{0}$ (resp. $e_{3}$ ) be an edge of $T$ defining the edge-clique $\{0,1,2\}$ (resp. $\{1,2,3\})$ such that $e_{3}$ is closest to $e_{0}$. Clearly, $e_{0} \neq e_{3}$, because otherwise we get a
$\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. The vertices $\{4, \ldots, n-1\}$ constitute a connected component of $G$, therefore the union of the corresponding paths is a subtree $T^{\prime}$ of $T$. $T^{\prime}$ intersects both $P_{0}$ and $P_{3}$, therefore there is at least one path $P_{j} \notin\left\{P_{0}, P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}\right\}$ that contains $e_{3}$. We conclude that $\{1,2,3, j\}$ is an edge-clique. If $j=4$ then it induces a pair isomorphic to $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$, otherwise $\{1,3, j\}$ is a red edge-clique. Both cases contradict our assumptions.

Lemma 3.13. Let $(G, C)$ be a pair satisfying (P2), (P3) and let $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ be a weak dual tree of $(G, C)$. Then (i) there is a bijection between the contractible edges of $(G, C)$ and the intermediate vertices of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$, (ii) the tree obtained from $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ by smoothing out the intermediate vertex corresponding to a contractible edge e is a weak dual tree of $(G, C)_{/ e}$.

Proof. (i) We define the bijection $f$ as follows: Let $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ be the weak dual tree corresponding to some $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$, and let $e$ be a contractible edge of $(G, C)$. Then $e$ is not part of any $B B R$ triangle. As every blue edge must be in some triangle, $e$ is in a non-empty set of $B R R$ triangles. Exactly one of these triangles is in $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$, and this triangle corresponds to an intermediate vertex of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ that we designate as $f(e)$. $f$ is one-to-one because every intermediate vertex corresponds to one $B R R$ triangle of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$, and every $B R R$ has one blue edge. We now show that $f$ is onto. Assume by contradiction that $f$ is not onto. Then, without loss of generality there is a $B R R$ triangle $\{1,2, j\}(j \notin\{0,1,2,3\})$ of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ where $e=\{1,2\}$ is not contractible. Then either $\{0,2\}$ or $\{1,3\}$ is an edge of $E(G) \backslash E(C)$. Let, without loss of generality $\{0,2\}$ be an edge of $E(G) \backslash E(C)$. Then $\{0,1,2\}$ is an edge-clique. Let $E^{\prime}$ be the set of edges of (the path of) $T$ defining this edge-clique. We claim that $\forall k \notin\{0,1,2\}, P_{k} \cap E^{\prime}=\emptyset$. Indeed, if $k=n-1$ and $P_{k}$ contains an edge of $E^{\prime}$, then $\{n-1,0,1,2\}$ induces a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$, and if $k \neq n-1$ then $\{k, 0,2\}$ induces a red edgeclique. In both cases we reach a contradiction. Consider the subtrees of $T$ separated by $E^{\prime}$. As $P_{j} \cap E^{\prime}=\emptyset$ it is completely contained in one of these subtrees, say $T_{j}$. $P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ intersect $P_{j}$, therefore they intersect $T_{j}$. However $P_{0}$ does not intersect $T_{j}$ as this would either contradict the definition of $E^{\prime}$ or $P_{0}$ would split from $P_{1}$. On the other hand, the vertices $\{j+1, j+2 \ldots, 0\}$ constitute a connected component of $G$, therefore the union of the paths $\left\{P_{j+1}, P_{j+2} \ldots, P_{0}\right\}$ is a subtree $T^{\prime}$ of $T . T^{\prime}$ intersects
both $P_{0}$ and $P_{j}$, therefore $T^{\prime}$ intersects $E^{\prime}$. In other words there is at least one path $P_{l} \in\left\{P_{j+1}, P_{j+2} \ldots, P_{0}\right\}$ that intersects $E^{\prime}$, a contradiction.
(ii) Let $e=\{i, i+1\}$ and $\{i, i+1, j\}$ the $B R R$ triangle of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ (that corresponds to $f(e))$. After the contraction of $e$, this triangle reduces to a red edge. The same holds for $\mathcal{O}(G, C)_{/ e}$ that contains all the faces of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ except the $B R R$ triangle that disappeared. The corresponding weak dual tree is $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ with $f(e)$ smoothed out.

We note that if $n=4$ Lemma 3.12 does not hold. However the following corollary of lemmata 3.12 and 3.13 holds for every $n$.

Corollary 3.14. If $(G, C)$ is a pair satisfying $(P 1-3)$ with $C$ isomorphic to $C_{n}$, then: (i) $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ does not have intermediate vertices, (ii) $n$ is even and $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ has $n / 2$ leaves, and (iii) $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ is a path if and only if $n=4$.

### 3.4.3. The Minimal Representation

In this section we present an algorithm solving P3-HamiltonianPairRec for $n \geq 5$, provided that assumptions $(P 1)-(P 2)$ hold. The representation returned by the algorithm is a planar tour. We show that it is the unique minimal representation of $(G, C)$ satisfying ( $P 3$ ).

Lemma 3.15. If $(G, C)$ is a hamiltonian pair with $n=|V(G)|>4$ for which properties $(P 1-3)$ hold then $G$ is outerplanar and the unique minimal representation of $(G, C)$ satisfying (P3) is a planar tour of the weak dual tree of $G$.

Proof. The proof is by induction on the smallest number $h$ of junctions of a weak dual tree of $(G, C)$. Let $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ be a weak dual tree of $(G, C)$ with $h$ junctions, and $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ the corresponding maximal outerplanar graph. Index arithmetic is modulo $n$ through the proof, and $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is a minimal representation of $(G, C)$ satisfying ( $P 3$ ). We first recall that since $(G, C)$ satisfies $(P 1)$, by Corollary 3.14, $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ contains
only junctions and leaves. In the sequel we show that $T$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ and $\mathcal{P}$ is a planar tour of $T$. We do this by combining planar tours of subtrees into a planar tour a tree. Two basic tools that we use in the construction are the following two claims that state, roughly speaking, (i) that two adjacent holes of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ are represented by two pies with distinct centers, and (ii) that the representations associated with disjoint subtrees of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$, reside in disjoint subtrees of $T$.

For a junction $x$ of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$, let $H_{x}$ be the set of vertices of the hole corresponding to $x$ in $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$. By Property (P3), $H_{x}$ is represented by a pie. We denote by $f(x)$ be the center of the pie in $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ representing $H_{x}$.

Claim 3.16. If $u, v$ are two adjacent junctions of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ then $f(u) \neq f(v)$.

Proof. Let $\{i, j\}$ be the edge common to the holes $H_{u}$ and $H_{v}$. In other words $\{i, j\}$ is the dual of the edge $\{u, v\}$ of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$. Let $k \neq i$ and $k^{\prime} \neq i$ be the vertices adjacent to $j$ in these two holes. Assume for a contradiction that $f(u)=f(v)$ (see Figure 3.7 for an illustration). $P_{i}, P_{j}, P_{k}$ are consecutive in one pie and $P_{i}, P_{j}, P_{k^{\prime}}$ are consecutive in the


Figure 3.7. Adjacent holes of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ are mapped to different centers.
other. Then $P_{k}$ and $P_{k^{\prime}}$ intersect $P_{j}$ on the same edge (incident to $f(u)$ ), thus forming an edge-clique of $G$. We will show that this is a red edge-clique of $G$, contradicting $(P 3)$. Indeed, $\{j, k\}$ and $\left\{j, k^{\prime}\right\}$ are red edges of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$. If $\left\{k, k^{\prime}\right\}$ is a blue edge then $\left\{j, k, k^{\prime}\right\}$ constitutes a $B R R$ triangle of $\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ that corresponds to an intermediate vertex of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$, contradicting Corollary 3.14.

Claim 3.17. Let $u$ be a junction of degree d of a weak dual tree of $(G, C)$. Let $S_{1}, S_{2}, \ldots, S_{d}$ be the connected components of $C \backslash H_{u}$, and let $\mathcal{P}_{i}$ be the set of paths
representing the vertices of $S_{i}$ in a minimal representation. Then $H_{u}$ is represented by a pie with edges $e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{d}$ whose removal together with $f(u)$ divides $T$ into subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots, T_{d}$, such that:
(i) $\cup \mathcal{P}_{i} \subseteq T_{i}+e_{i}$ for every $i \in[d]$,
(ii) $\cup \mathcal{P}_{i} \subseteq T_{i}$ whenever $S_{i}$ is not a singleton, and
(iii) $E\left(T_{i}\right)=\emptyset$ whenever $S_{i}$ is a singleton.

Proof. (i,ii) The removal of $f(u)$ from $T$ (together with its incident edges) defines at least $d$ subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}, \ldots T_{d}$ of $T$ where $e_{i}$ has one endpoint in $T_{i}$ for $i \in[d]$. We consider two vertices $i, j$ consecutive on the hole $H_{u}$. Without loss of generality $P_{i}$ contains $e_{0}$ and $e_{1}, P_{j}$ contains $e_{1}$ and $e_{2}$. Consider the segment (i.e. connected component) $S=\{i+1, i+2, \ldots, j-1\}$ of $G \backslash H_{u}$. We will conclude the proof of (i,ii) by showing that $\cup \mathcal{P}_{S} \subseteq T_{1}$ where $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ is the set of paths in $\mathcal{P}$ that represent the vertices of $S$.

If $S$ contains at least two vertices, then the hole adjacent to $H_{u}$ is a red hole $H_{v}$. By Claim 3.16, $f(u) \neq f(v)$. Since $f(u), f(v) \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{j}\right)$ and $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{j}\right)\right| \leq 2$ this implies that $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{j}\right)=\{f(u), f(v)\}$.

Let $P=p_{T}(f(u), f(v))$ and let $T_{u}, T_{v}, T_{1}^{\prime}, T_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots$ be the trees of the forest obtained by the removal of the edges of $P$ from $T$, where $V\left(T_{u}\right) \cap V(P)=f(u), V\left(T_{v}\right) \cap V(P)=$ $f(v)$ and $V\left(T_{\ell}^{\prime}\right) \cap V(P)$ is an intermediate vertex of $P$. We observe that if a path $P_{k}$ intersects some subtree $T_{\ell}^{\prime}$ in at least one edge and also intersects $P$, then $\{i, j, k\}$ is a red edge-clique, contradicting property $(P 3)$. Therefore, every path intersecting $T_{\ell}^{\prime}$ is contained in $T_{\ell}^{\prime}$ implying that set of vertices represented by such paths are disconnected from the rest of $G$, contradicting the connectedness of $G$. We conclude that the tree $T_{\ell}^{\prime}$ contains no paths and since $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is minimal, $T_{\ell}^{\prime}$ consists of a single vertex, namely an intermediate vertex of $P$. Summarizing, we have $T=T_{u} \cup T_{v} \cup P$. Finally, we note that $T_{1}=P \cup T_{v}$. In the sequel we show that $\mathcal{P}_{S} \subseteq T_{v}$ and $P$ consists of the edge $e_{1}$.

Let $S^{\prime}=S \backslash\{i+1, j-1\} . H_{v}$ contains at least one vertex $k \in S^{\prime}$, and $P_{k}$ is part of the pie centered at $f(v)$. Therefore, $P_{k} \subseteq T_{v}$, implying that $\mathcal{P}_{S^{\prime}} \cap T_{v} \neq \emptyset$. If $P_{k^{\prime}}$ crosses $v$ for some $k^{\prime} \in S^{\prime}$ then $\left\{i, j, k^{\prime}\right\}$ constitutes a red edge clique, contradicting property (P3). Therefore, $\cup \mathcal{P}_{S^{\prime}} \subseteq T_{v}$. We now show that $P_{i+1} \cup P_{j-1} \subseteq T_{v}$. Since $i+1$ (resp. $j-1$ ) is adjacent to $i+2 \in S^{\prime}$ (resp. $j-2 \in S^{\prime}$ ), both of $P_{i+1}$ and $P_{j-2}$ intersect $\cup \mathcal{P}_{S^{\prime}}$ implying that the both intersect $T_{v}$. We now consider the $B B R$ triangle $j, j+1, j+2$. We have $P_{j} \nsim P_{j+2}$, therefore $\emptyset \neq \operatorname{split}\left(P_{j}, P_{j+2}\right) \subseteq V\left(P_{j+2}\right) \subseteq V\left(T_{v}\right)$. Let $x$ be vertex of $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{j}, P_{j+2}\right)$ closest to $v$ (possibly $x=v$ ). Assume, by way of contradiction that $P_{j+1}$ crosses $v$. If $P_{j+1}$ does not cross $x$ then $P_{j+1} \| P_{j+2}$, otherwise $P_{j+1} \nsim P_{j+2}$ or $P_{j+1} \nsim P_{j}$. Both cases contradict the fact that $j, j+1, j+2$ are consecutive in $C$. Therefore, $P_{j+1}$ does not cross $v$, i.e. $P_{j+1} \subseteq T_{v}$. Similarly, $P_{i-1} \subseteq T_{v}$. We conclude that $\cup \mathcal{P}_{S} \subseteq T_{v}$. Since the only paths intersecting $P$ are $P_{i}$ and $P_{j}$, and by the minimality of the representation, $P$ consists of only one edge, namely $e_{1}$, concluding the proof of (i) and (ii) for this case. Otherwise, $S$ is a singleton. Then $S=\{i+1\}$ and $i, i+1, j$ are consecutive in $C$. Therefore, $P_{i+1} \sim P_{i}$ and $P_{i+1} \sim P_{j}$. Then, $P_{i+1}$ is contained in $T_{1}+e_{1}$
(iii) If $S$ is a singleton, the only paths intersecting $T_{1}+e_{1}$ are $P_{i}, P_{i+1}, P_{j}$, since all the other paths are in their respective subtrees, each disjoint from $T_{1}$. Together with the minimality of the representation, this implies that $P_{i+1}$ consists of the single edge $e_{1}$ and $E\left(T_{1}\right)=\emptyset$.

We now proceed with the proof the lemma. If $h=0, \mathcal{W}(G, C)$ contains at most two vertices implying that $n \leq 4$. Therefore, $h \geq 1$.

Consult Figures 3.8 a and 3.8 b for the following discussion. To keep the figure simple, most of the paths are omitted and the segments having more than one vertex, i.e. $S_{1}, S_{3}, S_{5}$, are depicted by arcs. Let $u$ be a junction of $\mathcal{W}(G, C), H_{u}=$ $\left\{h_{0}, h_{1}, \ldots, h_{d-1}\right\}, S_{i}$ be the segment of $C \backslash H_{u}$ between $h_{i}$ and $h_{i+1}$, and let $e_{1}, \ldots, e_{d}$, $T_{1}, \ldots, T_{d}$ as in Claim 3.17.

If $h=1$ all the segments $S_{i}, i \in[0, d-1]$ are singletons. Then $T_{i}=\emptyset$ and the only vertex $h_{i}+1$ of $S_{i}$ is represented by a path consisting of $e_{i}$, for every $i \in[0, d-1]$. Therefore, $T$ is a star isomorphic to $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ and $\mathcal{P}$ is a planar tour of it.

If $h>1$ for a singleton segment $S_{i}$ we have $T_{i}=\emptyset$ and the only vertex $h_{i}+1$ of $S_{i}$ is represented by a path consisting of $e_{i}$. For a segment $S_{i}$ consisting of at least two vertices we proceed as follows: the edge $h_{i}, h_{i+1}$ separates $H_{u}$ from another red hole $H_{v}$ where $f(u) \neq f(v)$ by Claim 3.16. This implies that $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{h_{i}}, P_{h_{i+1}}\right)=\{f(u), f(v)\}$, and without loss of generality $f(v) \in V\left(T_{i}\right)$.

For the following discussion see Figures 3.8c and 3.8d. Let $\bar{S}_{i}=S_{i} \cup\left\{h_{i}, h_{i+1}\right\}$ and let $\left(\bar{G}_{i}, \bar{C}_{i}\right)$ be the pair obtained from the pair $\left(G\left[\bar{S}_{i}\right], C\left[\bar{S}_{i}\right]\right)$ by adding to it a new vertex $v_{i}$ and two edges $\left\{v_{i}, h_{i}\right\},\left\{v_{i}, h_{i+1}\right\}$. Let also $\bar{T}_{i}=T_{i}+e_{i}$ and $\overline{\mathcal{P}}_{i}=$ $\mathcal{P}_{S_{i}} \cup\left\{P_{h_{i}} \cap \bar{T}_{i}, P_{h_{i+1}} \cap \bar{T}_{i}, P_{v_{i}}\right\}$ where $P_{x}$ is the path consisting of the edge $e_{i}$. Then $\left\langle\bar{T}_{i}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}_{i}\right\rangle$ is a representation of $\left(\bar{G}_{i}, \bar{C}_{i}\right)$, since the paths $P_{h_{i}}$ and $P_{h_{i+1}}$ split in a vertex $f(v)$ of $T_{i}$ and the other parts are completely contained in $T_{i}$, by Claim 3.17.

We note that a minifying operation applied to an edge of $T_{i}$ to get a representation equivalent to $\left\langle\bar{T}_{i}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}_{i}\right\rangle$ can be applied to $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ to get an equivalent representation to $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ contradicting the minimality of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Moreover, any minifying operation on $e_{i}$ will cause $P_{v_{i}}$ to have an empty intersection with $P_{h_{i}}$ or with $P_{h_{i+1}}$. Therefore, $\left\langle\bar{T}_{i}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}_{i}\right\rangle$ is minimal. By the inductive hypothesis (i) $\bar{G}_{i}$ is outerplanar, (ii) $\overline{\mathcal{P}}_{i}$ is a planar tour of $\bar{T}_{i}$, and, (iii) $\bar{T}_{i}$ is isomorphic to the weak dual tree of $\bar{G}_{i}$. Consider $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ as rooted at $u$, and let $\mathcal{W}_{i}$ be the subtree of $u$ containing $v$. We note that the weak dual tree of $\bar{G}_{i}$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{W}_{i}$.

It remains to observe that $T$ is the union of all trees $\bar{T}_{i}$, i.e. isomorphic to $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$, and that $\mathcal{P}$ is a planar tour of it. $G$ is outerplanar, since each $G_{i}$ is outerplanar, and if $G$ is not outerplanar, then there is an edge between a vertex of $S_{i}$ and a vertex of $S_{j}$ for $i, j \in[d]$ and $i \neq j$. However, this is a contradiction to the fact that, by Claim 3.17, $\cup S_{i} \subseteq \bar{T}_{i}, \cup S_{j} \subseteq \bar{T}_{j}$ and $\bar{T}_{i}, \bar{T}_{j}$ are edge-disjoint.


Figure 3.8. (a), (b), (c), (d) An induction step of the proof of Lemma 3.15 illustrated for $d=5$, (e) The unique minimal representation of ( $G, C$ ) satisfying ( $P 3$ ) obtained by combining the subtrees and the paths of the segments with a representation of a hole $H_{u}$.

Lemma 3.18. If $(G, C)$ is a hamiltonian pair on $n>4$ vertices and $G$ is outerplanar such that every edge of the outer face of $G$ is contained in a $B B R$ triangle, then properties $(P 1-3)$ hold for $(G, C)$.

Proof. $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ satisfies (P1) since every edge of $C_{n}$ is in a $B B R$ triangle. Since $G$ is outerplanar it does not contain a $K_{4}$. Therefore, $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ satisfies $(P 2)$. To prove that $(P 3)$ holds, we show by induction on the number $h$ of junctions of the weak dual tree $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ of $G$ that a planar tour of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ is a representation of $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ satisfying (P3):

If $h=1$ then $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ is a star, and $G=\mathcal{O}(G, C)$ is a hole surrounded by $B B R$ triangles. Then, a planar tour of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ is a representation of $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ satisfying (P3).

If $h>1$ we pick an chord $e=\{i, j\}$ of $C$ separating two red holes of $G$ and construct two pairs $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right),\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ in a way similar to the proof of Lemma 3.15. $V^{\prime}=\{i, i+1, \ldots, j\}$ and $V^{\prime \prime}=\{j, j+1, \ldots, i\} .\left(G^{\prime}, V^{\prime}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\left(G^{\prime \prime}, V^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)$ consists of $\left(G\left[V^{\prime}\right], C\left[V^{\prime}\right]\right)$ (resp. $\left(G\left[V^{\prime \prime}\right], C\left[V^{\prime \prime}\right]\right)$ ) and an additional vertex with two adjacent edges closing the cycle. By the inductive assumption, a planar tour of $\mathcal{W}\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\mathcal{W}\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)$ is a representation of $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)$. Removing from these planar tours the short paths corresponding to the vertices not in $V(G)$ and gluing together the rest by identifying the common endpoints of the paths $P_{i}, P_{j}$ we get a planar tour of $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ that represents $(G, C)$.

We get the following theorem as a corollary of lemmata 3.12, 3.15 and 3.18.
Theorem 3.19. The following statements are equivalent whenever $n>4$ :
(i) $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ satisfies assumptions $(P 1-3)$.
(ii) $\left(G, C_{n}\right)$ has a unique minimal representation satisfying (P3) which is a planar tour of a weak dual tree of $G$.
(iii) $G$ is Hamiltonian outerplanar and every face adjacent to the unbounded face $F$ is a triangle having two edges in common with $F$, (i.e. a $B B R$ triangle).

Algorithm BuildPlanartour calculates a planar tour of a weak dual tree $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$. Therefore,

Theorem 3.20. Instances of P3-HamiltonianPairRec satisfying properties (P1), (P2) can be solved in polynomial time.

```
Require: \(|V(G)| \geq 5\)
Require: \((G, C)\) satisfies assumptions \((P 1),(P 2)\)
Ensure: \(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle\) is the unique minimal representation of \((G, C)\) satisfying \((P 3)\)
    if \(G\) is not outerplanar then
        return "NO"
    \(\bar{T} \leftarrow \mathcal{W}(G, C) . \quad \triangleright\) Corresponding to \(\mathcal{O}(G, C)\)
    Build the planar tour:
    Let \(\left\{v_{0}, v_{1}, \ldots, v_{k-1}\right\}\) be the leaves of \(\bar{T}\) ordered as they are
    encountered in a DFS traversal of \(\bar{T}\) corresponding to the planar embedding
    suggested by \(\mathcal{O}(G, C)\).
    Let \(L_{i}=p_{\bar{T}}\left(v_{i}, v_{(i+1) \bmod k}\right)\)
    Let \(S_{i}\) be the path of length 1 starting at \(v_{i}\).
    \(\overline{\mathcal{P}}_{L} \leftarrow\left\{L_{i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq n-1\right\}\).
    \(\overline{\mathcal{P}}_{S} \leftarrow\left\{S_{i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq n-1\right\}\).
    Let \(\bar{P}_{i}= \begin{cases}L_{i / 2} & \text { if } i \text { is even } \\ S_{\lfloor i / 2\rfloor} & \text { otherwise }\end{cases}\)
    \(\overline{\mathcal{P}} \leftarrow\left\{\bar{P}_{i} \mid 0 \leq i \leq 2 n-1\right\} \quad \triangleright=\overline{\mathcal{P}}_{L} \cup \overline{\mathcal{P}}_{S}\)
    return \(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle\)
```

Figure 3.9. BuildPlanarTour $(G, C)$ algorithm.

Figure 3.10 depicts a YES instance of P3-HamiltonianPairRec.
3.5. Pairs $(G, C)$ Satisfying $(P 2)$ and $(P 3)$

In this section we characterize the minimal representations of $(G, C)$ pairs satisfying ( $P 2$ ) and ( $P 3$ ). Similar to the previous section, our first goal is to present an algorithm solving the P3-HamiltonianPairRec problem for instances satisfying $(P 2)$. In other words, our goal is to extend Theorem 3.20 to pairs that do not satisfy $(P 1)$, i.e. which are contractible. In Section 3.5.1 we investigate the properties of the


Figure 3.10. A pair $(G, C)$, its weak dual tree $\mathcal{W}(G, C)$ and the representation of $(G, C)$ returned by BuildPlanarTour.
contraction operation, in Section 3.5.2 we analyze the special case of $n \leq 6$ and finally in Section 3.5.3 we present the algorithm and characterization for $n>6$.

### 3.5.1. Contraction of Pairs

In this section we show that (i) the contraction operation preserves ENPT edges, (ii) the order of contractions is irrelevant, and (iii) the contraction operation preserves (P2), (P3).

Lemma 3.21. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation for the pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$, and let $e=\{p, q\} \in$ $E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$. If $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ is defined then $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$ is a representation for the pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$.

Proof. By Lemma $3.10\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$ is an EPT representation for $G_{/ e}$. It remains to show that it is an ENPT representation for $G^{\prime} / e$, i.e. that for any two paths $P_{p^{\prime}}, P_{q^{\prime}} \in\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$, the edge $e^{\prime}=\left\{p^{\prime}, q^{\prime}\right\}$ is in $E\left(G^{\prime}{ }_{\mid e}\right) \Longleftrightarrow P_{p^{\prime}} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}$. Let $P_{s}=P_{p} \cup P_{q}$ and $s$ be the vertex obtained by the contraction. We assume first that $P_{s} \notin\left\{P_{p^{\prime}}, P_{q^{\prime}}\right\}$. Then $e^{\prime} \in E\left(G^{\prime} / e\right) \Longleftrightarrow e^{\prime} \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right) \Longleftrightarrow P_{p^{\prime}} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}$ as required. Now we assume without loss of generality that $P_{p^{\prime}}=P_{s}$ and we recall that $e=\{p, q\} \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$ is the contracted edge. We have to show that $e^{\prime}=\left\{s, q^{\prime}\right\} \in E\left(G^{\prime} / e\right) \Longleftrightarrow P_{s} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}$.

We observe that

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\{s, q^{\prime}\right\} \in E\left(G^{\prime} / e\right) & \Longleftrightarrow\left\{p, q^{\prime}\right\} \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right) \vee\left\{q, q^{\prime}\right\} \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right) \\
& \Longleftrightarrow P_{p} \sim P_{q^{\prime}} \vee P_{q} \sim P_{q^{\prime}} \tag{3.1}
\end{align*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{align*}
P_{s} \sim P_{q^{\prime}} & \Longleftrightarrow \quad\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right) \cap P_{q^{\prime}} \neq \emptyset \wedge \operatorname{split}\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}, P_{q^{\prime}}\right)=\emptyset \\
& \Longleftrightarrow\left(P_{p} \cap P_{q^{\prime}} \neq \emptyset \vee P_{q} \cap P_{q^{\prime}} \neq \emptyset\right) \wedge \operatorname{split}\left(P_{p}, P_{q^{\prime}}\right)=\emptyset \wedge \operatorname{split}\left(P_{q}, P_{q^{\prime}}\right) \tag{4}
\end{align*}
$$

Clearly, (3.2) implies (3.1). To conclude the proof, assume that (3.1) holds. Then $P_{p} \cap P_{q^{\prime}} \neq \emptyset \vee P_{q} \cap P_{q^{\prime}} \neq \emptyset$. Now assume, by way of contradiction, that (3.2) does not hold. Then $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{p}, P_{q^{\prime}}\right) \neq \emptyset \vee \operatorname{split}\left(P_{q}, P_{q^{\prime}}\right) \neq \emptyset$ implying $P_{p} \nsim P_{q^{\prime}} \vee P_{q} \nsim P_{q^{\prime}}$. Combining with (3.1) this implies that exactly one of $P_{p} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}$ and $P_{q} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}$ holds. Therefore without loss of generality $P_{p} \sim P_{q^{\prime}}, P_{q} \nsim P_{q^{\prime}}$. Then $e^{\prime}=\left\{p, q^{\prime}\right\} \in E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$ and $e \triangle e^{\prime} \in E(G)$, therefore $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ is undefined, thus constituting a contradiction to the assumption of the lemma.

Let $\bar{E}=\left\{e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{k}\right\} \subseteq E\left(G^{\prime}\right)$. For every $k>1$ we define $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e_{1}, \ldots . e_{k}} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}$ $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k-1} / e_{k}}$ provided that both contractions on the right hand side are defined, otherwise it is undefined. The following Lemma follows from Lemma 3.21 and states that the order of contraction of the edges is irrelevant.

Lemma 3.22. Let $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ be a pair, $\bar{E}=\left\{e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{k}\right\} \subseteq E(G)$, and $\pi$ a permutation of the integers $\{1, \ldots, k\}$. Then $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\left.\right|_{e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}}$ is defined if and only if $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{e_{\pi(1)}, \ldots, e_{\pi(k)}}$ is defined. Moreover when they are defined $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\left.\right|_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}=\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{e_{\pi(1)}, \ldots, e_{\pi(k)}}$.

Proof. Assume that $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\mid e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}$ is defined. By $k-1$ successive applications of Lemma 3.21 we conclude that a representation of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\mid e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}$ can be obtained from a repre-
sentation of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ by applying a sequence of $k-1$ union operations. The result of $k-1$ union operations yield a set of paths. As union is commutative and associative, this result will remain the same, (i.e. a set of paths) if we change the order of the operations. On the other hand as union preserves split vertices, and the result does not contain split vertices, there are no split vertices at any given step of new sequence of union operations. We conclude that $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\mid e_{\pi(1)}, \ldots, e_{\pi(k)}}$ is defined. The other direction holds by symmetry. Whenever both $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\mid e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}$ and $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{e_{\pi(1), \ldots, e_{\pi(k)}}}$ are defined we have $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{\mid e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}=\left(G_{/ e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}}, G^{\prime} / e_{1}, \ldots, e_{k}\right)=\left(G_{/ e_{\pi}(1), \ldots, e_{\pi}(k)}, G^{\prime} / e_{\pi}(1), \ldots, e_{\pi}(k)\right)=$ $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{e_{\pi(1)}, \ldots, e_{\pi(k)}}$.

Based on this result, we denote the contracted pair as $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ \bar{E}}$ and say that $\bar{E}$ is contractible.

If $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle=\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$ for two paths $P_{p}, P_{q} \in \mathcal{P}_{1}$ we denote this by $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \rightsquigarrow_{U}$ $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$. The relation $\gtrsim_{U}$ is the reflexive-transitive closure of $\rightsquigarrow_{U}$, and $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \lesssim_{U}$ $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$ is equivalent to $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle \lesssim_{U}\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle$.
$\left(G_{1}, G_{1}^{\prime}\right) \rightsquigarrow_{C}\left(G_{2}, G_{2}^{\prime}\right)$ if $\left(G_{2}, G_{2}^{\prime}\right)=\left(G_{1}, G_{1}^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ for some $e \in E\left(G_{1}^{\prime}\right)$. The relation $\gtrsim_{C}$ is the reflexive-transitive closure of $\rightsquigarrow_{C}$, and $\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle \lesssim_{C}\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle$ is equivalent to $\left\langle T_{2}, \mathcal{P}_{2}\right\rangle \lesssim C\left\langle T_{1}, \mathcal{P}_{1}\right\rangle$.

By Lemma $3.21, \lesssim_{U}$ is homomorphic to $\lesssim_{C}$.

Following the above definitions, a non-contractible pair of graphs is said to be contraction-minimal, because it is minimal in the partial order $\lesssim_{C}$.

We proceed by showing that the contraction operation preserves assumptions $(P 2),(P 3)$.

Lemma 3.23. Let $\{p, q, r\}$ be a $B B R$ triangle of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ with $\{p, r\}$ being the red edge. Then $q \in V(G)$, i.e. $q$ is not the vertex obtained by the contraction.

Proof. Assume, by contradiction that $e=\left\{q^{\prime}, q^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ and $q$ is the vertex obtained by the contraction of $e$. Assume without loss of generality that $\left\{p, q^{\prime}\right\}$ and $\left\{q^{\prime \prime}, r\right\}$ are edges of $G^{\prime}$. Then both $\left\{p, q^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ and $\left\{r, q^{\prime}\right\}$ are non-edges of $G$, because otherwise $e$ is not contractible. Then $\left\{p, q^{\prime}, q^{\prime \prime}, r\right\}$ is a hole of size 4 with blues edges, a contradiction.

Lemma 3.24. (i) If ( $P 2$ ) holds for $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ then ( $P 2$ ) holds for $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$.
(ii) If (P3) holds for $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ then (P3) holds for $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$.

Proof. (i) Assume, by contradiction, that ( $G, G^{\prime}$ ) does not have an induced sub-pair isomorphic to $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ and without loss of generality $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ has a sub-pair isomorphic to ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ) induced by the vertices $U=\{p, q, r, s\}$ where $p$ and $s$ are the endpoints of the subgraph isomorphic to $P_{4}$. Let $v$ be the vertex created by the contraction of $e$. If $v \notin U$ then the sub-pair induced by $U$ is also a sub-pair of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$, contradicting our assumption. Therefore $v \in U$. By Lemma 3.23 we have that $v \notin\{q, r\}$. Therefore, let without loss of generality $v=p, e=\left\{p^{\prime}, p^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ and $p^{\prime \prime}$ is adjacent to $q$ in $G^{\prime} .\left\{p^{\prime}, q\right\}$ is a non-edge of $G$, because $e$ is contractible. As $\{p, s\}$ and $\{p, r\}$ are edges of $G_{/ e}$, $\left\{p^{\prime}, s\right\}$ or $\left\{p^{\prime \prime}, s\right\}$ is an edge of $G$, and $\left\{p^{\prime}, r\right\}$ or $\left\{p^{\prime \prime}, r\right\}$ is an edge of $G$. If $\left\{p^{\prime \prime}, s\right\}$ is an edge of $G$ then $\left\{p^{\prime \prime}, r\right\}$ is a non-edge of $G$ since otherwise $\left\{p^{\prime \prime}, q, r, s\right\}$ induce a sub-pair isomorphic to $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ in $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$. Therefore $\left\{p^{\prime}, r\right\}$ is an edge of $G$. Then $\left\{p^{\prime}, p^{\prime \prime}, q, r\right\}$ induces a hole of size 4 with blue edges, a contradiction. Thus $\left\{p^{\prime}, s\right\}$ is an edge of $G$, since $\left\{p^{\prime}, q\right\}$ and $\left\{p^{\prime \prime}, s\right\}$ are non-edges of $G,\left\{p^{\prime}, p^{\prime \prime}, q, s\right\}$ induce a hole of length 4 with blue edges, a contradiction.
(ii) Assume, by contradiction, that $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ has a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ satisfying $(P 3)$ and that no representation of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ satisfies $(P 3)$. Let $v$ be the vertex created by the contraction of $e=\left\{v^{\prime}, v^{\prime \prime}\right\}$. Then by Lemma $3.10\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{v^{\prime}}, P_{v^{\prime \prime}}}$ is a representation of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ and it contains a red edge-clique $\{p, q, r\}$. If $v \notin\{p, q, r\}$ then $\{p, q, r\}$ is an edge-clique of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, contradicting our assumption. Assume without loss of generality that $v=p$. Let $e_{0}$ be an edge of $T$ defining the edge-clique $\{v, q, r\}$. Since $e_{0} \in P_{v^{\prime}} \cup P_{v^{\prime \prime}}$, without loss of generality $e_{0} \in P_{v^{\prime}}$. Then $\left\{v^{\prime}, q, r\right\}$ induces an edge-clique on $e_{0}$. This is clearly a red edge-clique since $e$ is contractible, a contradiction.

We now describe how minimal representations of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}$ can be obtained from minimal representations of ( $G, G^{\prime}$ ).

Lemma 3.25. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a minimal representation, $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ a representation such that $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle \lesssim\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\left.\right|_{p}, P_{q}}$ and $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle \cong\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\left.\right|_{p}, P_{q}}$. Let e be an edge of $T$ involved in a minimal sequence of minifying operations s that obtains $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ from $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$. There is an operation of $s$ and a path $P$ such that the operation removes e from $P$ ( $\operatorname{tr}(P, e)$, or contract $(e)$ and $e \in P)$ where at least one of the following holds:
(i) $e$ is a tail of $P_{p} \cap P_{q}, P \cap P_{p} \cap P_{q}=\{e\}$ and $P \cap\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right) \supsetneq\{e\}$.
(ii) e is incident to an internal vertex $u$ of $P_{p} \cup P_{q}$, e is a tail of $P, P$ is not in a pie with center $u$.

Proof. Let $G=\operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P})$ and $G^{\prime}=\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ and consider an operation op of $s$. Without loss of generality we can assume that $o p$ is the first operation of $s$, by Lemma 3.6. Furthermore, by Lemma 3.7, the representation obtained by applying op is also equivalent to $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$. Therefore without loss of generality op is the only operation of $s$. Note that $o p$ is defined on $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$ except when $o p$ is $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}, e\right)$. In this case $e$ is a tail of $P_{p}$ or $P_{q}$ (or both). In the following discussion, whenever we apply $o p$ to $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, we mean that we apply $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{p}, e\right)$ or $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{q}, e\right)$ one of which is well defined on $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$.

By the minimality of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, op cannot be applied to $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. More precisely, if $o p$ is applied, either an edge of $G$ becomes a non-edge, or a red edge of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ becomes a blue edge. We term such an edge of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ an affected edge and the corresponding paths of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ affected pair of paths. Let $\{r, s\}$ be an affected edge of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$. If $\left\{P_{r}, P_{s}\right\} \cap\left\{P_{p}, P_{q}\right\}=\emptyset$ then $P_{r}, P_{s}$ is a pair of affected paths in $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$, contradicting the fact that op can be applied to $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$. We conclude that $\left\{P_{r}, P_{s}\right\} \cap\left\{P_{p}, P_{q}\right\} \neq \emptyset$. Assume without loss of generality that $P_{s}=P_{p}$, i.e. $P_{r}, P_{p}$ is an affected pair of paths. We consider two disjoint cases:

Case 1) $\{r, p\}$ becomes a non-edge after applying op. Then $P_{r} \cap P_{p}=\{e\}$ for some edge $e$ of $T$, and after the removal of $e$ the intersection becomes empty. On the other
hand $P_{r} \cap\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right) \supsetneq\{e\}$, because otherwise $P_{r}$ and $P_{p} \cup P_{q}$ constitute an affected pair of paths in $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$. Then $e$ is a tail of $P_{p} \cap P_{q}$ (see Figure 3.11a) and $P_{r}$ is the claimed path $P$ (note that possibly $r=q$ as opposed to the figure). In this case i) holds.

Case 2) $\{r, p\}$ is a red edge, and it becomes a blue edge after applying op. Then $P_{r} \nsim P_{p}$ (therefore $r \neq q$ ) and $P_{r}, P_{p}$ do not split after applying op. Therefore $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{r}, P_{p}\right)=\{u\}$ for an endpoint $u$ of $e, e$ is a tail of exactly one of $P_{r}, P_{p}$, and $u$ is an internal vertex of $P_{p}$ thus of $P_{p} \cup P_{q}$. Let $\left\{P, P^{\prime}\right\}=\left\{P_{r}, P_{p}\right\}$ such that $e$ is a tail of $P$, and $e \notin P^{\prime}$. If $P$ is not in a pie with center $u$ then ii) holds. Otherwise $P$ has two neighbors $\left\{P^{\prime}, P^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ in this pie. $e \in P^{\prime \prime}$ because $e \notin P$ and $e$ is an edge incident to $u$, the center of the pie. Recalling that $e$ is a tail of $P$ we conclude that after the removal of $e$ from $P$, its intersection with $P^{\prime \prime}$ becomes empty. Therefore i) holds.


Figure 3.11. Possible minifying operations on $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{/ P_{p}, P_{q}}$.
Lemma 3.26. Every split vertex of a path $P$ of a broken planar tour is a center of a pie containing $P$.

Proof. By construction, every split vertex of a path $P$ of a tour is a center of a pie containing $P$. We will show that the same holds for a broken planar tour. Let $P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}$ be two paths of a broken planar tour such that $v \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}\right)$. These paths are sub-paths of two paths $P_{1}, P_{2}$ of a tour and $v \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{2}\right)$. Then $v$ is a center of a pie
containing $P_{1}, P_{2}$ and also other paths. Each one of the other paths has at least one sub-path in the broken planar tour that crosses $v$. These paths, together with $P_{1}^{\prime}, P_{2}^{\prime}$ constitute a pie with center $v$ of the broken planar tour. We conclude that every split vertex of $P$ is a center of a pie, and therefore case (ii) of Lemma 3.25 is impossible.

We notice that by Lemma 3.26 it follows that the case (ii) of Lemma 3.25 is impossible in the context of this section.

We now return to the study of the representations of pairs ( $G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}$ ) satisfying $(P 2),(P 3)$. Without loss of generality we let $V\left(G^{\prime}\right)=V\left(C^{\prime}\right)=\{0,1, \ldots, n-1\}, n \geq 5$ and note that all arithmetic operations on vertex numbers are done modulo $n$.

### 3.5.2. Small Cycles: the pairs $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ and $\left(G, C_{6}\right)$

In this Section we analyze the special cases of $n \in\{5,6\}$. This cases are special because our technique for the general case is based on contraction of cycles to smaller ones and assumes that the representation of a non-contractible pair is a planar tour (Theorem 3.20). However this theorem does not hold when $n=4$. The following lemma analyzes the case $n=5$. We note that in this case ( $P 3$ ) holds vacuously.

Lemma 3.27. If $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{5}\right)$ satisfies $(P 2)$ then (i) $G^{\prime}$ is the graph depicted in Figure 3.12, and (ii) $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{5}\right)$ has a unique minimal representation also depicted in Figure 3.12.

Proof. (i) $G^{\prime}$ contains at least two non-crossing red edges, because otherwise there is a hole of size 4 with blue edges. Without loss of generality, let these edges be $\{1,3\}$ and $\{1,4\}$. If one of $\{2,4\}$ or $\{0,3\}$ is a red edge, then we have a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$, contradicting our assumption. If $\{0,2\}$ is a red edge, then we have a hole of size 4 containing blue edges, contradicting Lemma 3.8. Therefore $\{1,3\}$ and $\{1,4\}$ are the only red edges in this pair.
(ii) We contract $\{3,4\}$ of $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{5}\right)$ and obtain the pair $\left(G, C_{4}\right)$ with one red edge $\{1,3.4\}$. This pair has a unique minimal representation $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ characterized in [20].

Any representation of $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{5}\right)$ is obtained by splitting the path $P_{3.4}^{\prime}$ of $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ into two overlapping paths and making sure that both of them split from $P_{1}$. This leads to the minimal representation depicted in Figure 3.12.

(a)

(b)

Figure 3.12. (a) The unique ENPT representation of $C_{5}$ satisfying ( $P 2$ ) and (b) corresponding pair $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$.
Lemma 3.28. If $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{6}\right)$ satisfies $(P 2)$ and ( $P 3$ ) then it is not contractible, i.e. it satisfies (P1).

Proof. Assume, by way of contradiction, that $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{6}\right)$ satisfies $(P 2)(P 3)$ and the edge $e=\{0,1\}$ is contractible. Therefore, $\{0,2\}$ and $\{5,1\}$ are non-edges of $G^{\prime} .\{2,5\}$ is also a non-edge, because otherwise $\{0,1,2,5\}$ is a hole of size 4 with blue edges. Then $\{0,1\}$ must be in a $B R R$ triangle. From the two possible options remaining, assume without loss of generality that this triangle is $\{0,1,4\}$. At least one of $\{2,4\}$ and $\{1,3\}$ is an edge of $G^{\prime}$ because otherwise $\{1,2,3,4\}$ is a hole of size 4 with blue edges. On the other hand, if both of them are edges then $\{1,2,3,4\}$ is a ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ), a contradiction. Therefore exactly one of them is an edge of $G^{\prime}$. We analyze these cases separately.

- $\{2,4\}$ is an edge of $G^{\prime},\{1,3\}$ is not an edge of $G^{\prime}$ : In this case $\{0,3\}$ is not an edge, because otherwise $\{0,1,2,3\}$ is a hole of size 4 with blue edges. Then $\{3,5\}$ is not an edge, because otherwise $\{0,1,2,3,5\}$ is a hole of size 5 with blue edges. Then $\{5,0,1,2,3\}$ induces a path on 4 vertices in $G^{\prime}$. Since none of the paths $P_{0}, P_{1}, P_{2}, P_{3}, P_{5}$ split from another, their union is a graph with maximum degree two, i.e. every representation of them is an interval representation where no three paths intersect at one edge. Now $P_{4} \sim P_{5}$ and $P_{4} \sim P_{3}$. Therefore, $P_{4}$ intersects all of $P_{0}, P_{1}$ and $P_{2}$ and does not split from them. Then $\{4,0\},\{4,1\},\{4,2\}$ are blue edges, a contradiction.
- $\{1,3\}$ is an edge of $G^{\prime},\{2,4\}$ is not an edge of $G^{\prime}$ : Assume by way of contradiction $\{0,1\}$ is contracted, the contracted pair is the same as the pair in Figure 3.12b where contracted edge $\{0,1\}$ corresponds to vertex 1 of $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$. We will show that 1 can not be a vertex obtained by a contraction. Let $\left\{1^{\prime}, 1^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ be the contracted edge. For the following discussion consult Figure 3.12a. One endpoint of each one of $P_{1^{\prime}}, P_{1^{\prime \prime}}$ is the same as the endpoints of $P_{1}$ since $P_{1}=P_{1^{\prime}} \cup P_{1^{\prime \prime}} . P_{1^{\prime}}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.P_{1^{\prime \prime}}\right)$ can not cross $v$ since otherwise $\left\{1^{\prime}, 2\right\}$ (resp. $\left\{0,1^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ ) is a blue chord. $P_{1^{\prime}} \sim P_{1^{\prime \prime}}$, therefore there exist some edge $e$ such that $P_{1^{\prime}} \cap P_{1^{\prime \prime}} \ni e$ and $e \in p_{T}(u, v)$. But $e \in p_{T}(u, v) \subseteq P_{3} \cup P_{4}$ then either $\left\{1^{\prime}, 3\right\}$ or $\left\{1^{\prime \prime}, 4\right\}$ (or both) is a blue chord.


### 3.5.3. The General Case

Algorithm shown in Figure 3.13 is a recursive description of FindMinRep-P2-P3. It follows the paradigm of obtaining a non-contractible pair by successive contractions, and then reversing the corresponding union operations in the representation. The reversal of the union operation, i.e. the breaking apart of a path is done by duplicating the path and then moving one endpoint of each path to an appropriate internal vertex of the original path, and possibly subdividing an edge. The key to the correctness of the algorithm is the following lemma that, among others, enables us to consider at this stage, only one minifying operation.

Lemma 3.29. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a minimal representation of $(G, C),\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ a broken planar tour representation such that $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle \lesssim\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$ and $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle \cong\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$. Every operation in a minimal sequence of operations that obtains $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ from $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$ is a contract(e) operation, where $e$ is a tail of $P_{p} \cap P_{q}$.

Proof. Consider an operation in a minimal sequence of minifying operations as in the statement of the lemma. Let $e$ be the edge involved in the operation, and let $P_{r}$ be a path whose existence is guaranteed by Lemma 3.25. By Lemma 3.26, case (ii) of Lemma 3.25 is impossible. Then case (i) of the lemma holds, i.e. there is a path $P_{r}$
such that (i) the minifying operation removes $e$ from $P_{r}$, (ii) $e$ is a tail of $P_{p} \cap P_{q}$, c) $P_{r} \cap P_{p} \cap P_{q}=\{e\}$, and d) $P_{r} \cap\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right) \supsetneq\{e\}$.

The minifying operation is either contract $(e)$ or $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{r}, e\right)$. We will show that if $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{r}, e\right)$ can be applied, i.e. no affected pair after applying $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{r}, e\right)$, then contract (e) can also be applied. For the following discussion consult Figure 3.11a where $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{r}, P_{p}\right)=$ $\emptyset$, i.e. the dotted part of $P_{r}$ adjacent to $e$ in the figure, is empty.

Without loss of generality we assume that $e$ is a tail of $P_{p}$. Since $e$ is not a tail of $P_{p} \cup P_{q}$, we have $r \neq p . q$. $e$ divides $T$ into two subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}$. As $e$ is a tail of $P_{p}, P_{p}$ can not intersect both subtrees. We assume without loss of generality that $T_{2} \cap P_{p}=\emptyset$. Let $\overline{\mathcal{P}}$ denote the set of paths of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle_{\mid P_{p}, P_{q}}$, i.e. $\overline{\mathcal{P}}=\mathcal{P} \backslash\left\{P_{p}, P_{q}\right\} \cup\left\{P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right\}$ and $e^{\prime}$ be the edge adjacent to $e$ in $P_{r} \cap\left(P_{p} \cup P_{q}\right)$. Every path of $P \in \overline{\mathcal{P}}$ that contains $e$ contains also $e^{\prime}$, because otherwise $P \cap P_{r}=\{e\}$ and $\left(P, P_{r}\right)$ would constitute an affected pair of $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{r}, e\right)$. For $k \in\{1,2\}$, let $\mathcal{P}_{k}=\left\{P \in \overline{\mathcal{P}} \mid P \cap T_{k} \neq \emptyset \wedge e\right.$ is a tail of $\left.P\right\}$. Note that by definition, $\mathcal{P}_{1} \cap \mathcal{P}_{2}=\emptyset$. As $e^{\prime} \in T_{2} \cap P_{r}$, we have $P_{r} \in \mathcal{P}_{2}$. We note that for every path $P_{s} \in \mathcal{P}_{2}, P_{p} \sim P_{s}$, i.e. $\{p, s\}$ is an edge of $C$. As the degree of $p$ is 2 in $C$ and both of $q$ and $r$ neighbors of $p$ in $C$, we conclude that $\mathcal{P}_{2}=\left\{P_{r}\right\}$. On the other hand, $\mathcal{P}_{1}=\emptyset$ because for every path $P_{s} \in \mathcal{P}_{1},\{s, r\}$ is an affected pair of $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{r}, e\right)$ (as $\left.P_{s} \cap P_{r}=\{e\}\right)$. Therefore $\mathcal{P}_{1} \cup \mathcal{P}_{2}=\left\{P_{r}\right\}$, i.e. the only path with tail $e$ is $P_{r}$.

Assume by way of contradiction that there exists an affected pair $\{s, t\}$ of contract (e). As $e^{\prime} \in P_{s} \cap P_{t}$, they intersect after the contraction. Therefore $\{s, t\}$ is a red-edge that becomes blue after the contraction. This can happen only if $e$ is a tail of exactly one of $P_{s}, P_{t}$. Therefore, $r \in\{s, t\}$ from the above discussion. But then $\{s, t\}$ constitute an affected pair of $\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{r}, e\right)$, contradicting to our initial assumption. We conclude that contract(e) has no affected pairs.

Theorem 3.30. Instances of P3-HamiltonianPairRec satisfying property ( $P 2$ ) can be solved in polynomial time. "YES" instances have a unique solution, and whenever $n \geq 6$ this solution is a broken planar tour.

```
Require: \(C^{\prime}=\left\{0,1, \ldots,\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right|-1\right\}\) is an Hamiltonian cycle of \(G^{\prime},\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right|>5\)
Ensure: A minimal representation \(\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle\) of \(\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)\) satisfying \((P 3)\) if any
    if \(\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)\) is contraction-minimal then
    if \(G^{\prime}\) is outerplanar then
        return BuildPlanarTour \(\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)\)
    else
        return "NO"
    Contract:
    Pick an arbitrary contractible edge \(e=\{i, i+1\}\) of \(C^{\prime},(G, C) \leftarrow\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)_{/ e}\)
    Let \(j\) be the vertex of \((G, C)\) created by the contraction of the edge \(e\)
    Recurse:
    \(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle \leftarrow\) FindMinRep-P2-P3 \((G, C)\).
    Uncontract:
    \(\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle \leftarrow\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle\)
    Let \(u\) and \(v\) be the endpoints of \(P_{j}\) such that \(u\) (resp. \(v\) ) is contained in \(P_{i-1}\)
    (resp. \(P_{i+2}\) )
    Replace \(P_{j} \in \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\) by two copies \(P_{i}\) and \(P_{i+1}\) of itself
    AdjustEndpoint \(\left(\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle, G, i, u\right)\), AdjustEndpoint \(\left(\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle, G, i+1, v\right)\)
    Validate:
    if \(\operatorname{Ept}\left(\overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right)=G^{\prime}\) and \(\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle\) satisfies (P3) then
        return \(\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle\)
    else
        return "NO"
    function AdjustEndpoint \((\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle, G, p, w) \quad \triangleright w\) will be adjusted
        \(e_{w}\) denotes the tail of \(P_{p}\) incident to \(w\)
        \(\mathcal{X}_{w}\) denotes \(\left\{P_{x}: e_{w} \in P_{x}\right.\) and \(\left.\{p, x\} \notin E(G)\right\}\)
        \(\mathcal{Y}_{w}\) denotes \(\left\{P_{y}: P_{p} \cap P_{y}=\left\{e_{w}\right\}\right.\) and \(\left.\{p, y\} \in E(G)\right\}\)
        while \(\mathcal{Y}_{w}=\emptyset\) and \(\mathcal{X}_{w} \neq \emptyset\) do
        \(\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{p}, e_{w}\right)\)
        if \(\mathcal{X}_{w} \neq \emptyset\) then \(\triangleright\) Also \(\mathcal{Y}_{w} \neq \emptyset\) as the while loop terminated
        Subdivide \(e_{w}\) into two edges \(e_{w}, e_{w}^{\prime} \quad \triangleright\) Revert the minifying operation
        for \(P_{x} \in \mathcal{X}_{w}\) do
            \(\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{w}, e_{w^{\prime}}\right)\)
        \(\operatorname{tr}\left(P_{p}, e_{w}\right)\)
```

Figure 3.13. FindMinRep-P2-P3 $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ algorithm.


Figure 3.14. The effect of union and minifying operations, and the reversal of this effect by Procedure AdjustEndpoint (invoked with $p=i$ ).

Proof. If $n=5$ the result follows from Lemma 3.27. If ( $G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}$ ) is a "NO" instance, then FindMinRep-P2-P3 returns "NO" in the validation phase. Therefore we assume that $n \geq 6$, and that $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ is a "YES" instance, i.e. it has at least one representation satisfying $(P 3)$. We will show that for any pair $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ satisfying $(P 2)$, and a minimal representation $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ of $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ that satisfies (P3), the representation $\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ returned by FindMinRep-P2-P3 is a broken planar tour and that

$$
\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle \cong\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle \text { and }\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle \lesssim\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle
$$

We will prove by induction on the number $k$ of contractible edges of $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$. If $k=0$ then $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ is not contractible, therefore satisfies $(P 1)$. In this case the algorithm invokes BuildPlanarTour and the claim follows from Theorem 3.20.

Otherwise $k>0$. We assume that the claim holds for $k-1$ and prove that it holds for $k$. As $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ contains at least one contractible edge, one such edge $\{i, i+1\}$ is chosen arbitrarily by the algorithm and contracted. The resulting pair $(G, C)=\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)_{\mid\{i, i+1\}}$ has the following properties:

- Satisfies (P2), (P3). (By Lemma 3.24)
- The number of contractible edges is $k-1$.
- $|V(G)| \geq 6$. This is because $|V(G)|=\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right|-1$ and $\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right|>6$. Indeed, if $\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right|=6$, we have $k=0$ by Lemma 3.28.

Therefore, $(G, C)$ satisfies the assumptions of the inductive hypothesis. Let $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be a minimal representation of $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ satisfying $(P 3)$. Then $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{/ P_{i}, P_{i+1}}$ is a representation of $(G, C)=\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)_{\mid\{i, i+1\}}$. By the inductive hypothesis, $\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle$ is a broken planar tour that satisfies

$$
\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle \cong\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{\mid P_{i}, P_{i+1}} \text { and }\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle \lesssim\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle_{/ P_{i}, P_{i+1}}
$$

In other words $\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle$ is obtained from $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ by replacing the two paths $P_{i}, P_{i+1}$ with the path $P_{i} \cup P_{i+1}$, then applying a (possibly empty) sequence of minifying operations. By Lemma 3.29, these minifying operations are contract(e) for a tail e of $P_{i} \cap P_{i+1}$. In the Uncontract phase, FindMinRep-P2-P3 performs a reversal of these transformations. See Figure 3.14 for the following discussion. One endpoint of each one of $P_{i}$ and $P_{i+1}$ is an endpoint of $P_{i} \cup P_{i+1}$. Therefore one needs to determine only one endpoint of each one of $P_{i}$ and $P_{i+1}$. First $P_{i} \cap P_{i+1}$ is duplicated and the so obtained paths are called $P_{i}, P_{i+1}$.

For $p \in\{i, i+1\}$, let $w$ be the endpoint of $P_{p}$ to be adjusted. $e_{w}$ denotes the tail of $P_{p}$ incident to $w$. We denote by $\mathcal{X}_{w}$ the set of paths containing $e_{w}$ such that vertices of $G^{\prime}$ corresponding to these paths are not adjacent to $p$. We denote by $\mathcal{Y}_{w}$ the set of paths intersecting $P_{p}$ only on $e_{w}$ and whose corresponding vertices in $G^{\prime}$ are adjacent to $p$. If $\mathcal{Y}_{w}$ is empty (that is, every path that intersects $P_{p}$ also intersects $P_{p} \backslash\left\{e_{w}\right\}, e_{w}$ can be safely removed from $P_{p}$ without losing intersections. If $\mathcal{X}_{w}$ is non-empty this removal is a necessary operation. The algorithm performs these tail removals as long as they are necessary and safe. If at the end of this loop, $\mathcal{X}_{w}$ is empty then we are done. Otherwise $\mathcal{X}_{w}$ and $\mathcal{Y}_{w}$ are non-empty, then $e_{w}$ can not be safely removed from $P_{p}$. In this case AdjustEndpoint subdivides $e_{w}$ (thus reversing the minifying operation $\operatorname{contract(e))}$ and removes one tail from $P_{p}$ and one tail from every path $X \in \mathcal{X}_{w}$, so that $P_{p}$ does not intersect $X$ but still intersects every path $Y \in \mathcal{Y}_{w}$.

### 3.6. Pairs $(G, C)$ Satisfying ( $P 3$ )

In the previous section we relaxed assumption ( $P 1$ ). In this section we relax assumption ( $P 2$ ), i.e. we allow sub-pairs isomorphic to $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. In Section 3.6.1 we investigate the basic properties of the representations of such sub-pairs, and characterize the representations of pairs $(G, C)$ with at most 6 vertices. In Section 3.6.2 we show that in bigger cycles such pairs can intersect only in a particular way, and we define the aggressive contraction operation that transforms a pair $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ with a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ to a pair $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ with one less vertex and at least one $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ less. Using these results, in Section 3.6.3 we present an algorithm that finds the unique minimal representation of a given pair $(G, C)$ satisfying $(P 3)$ and having more than 6 vertices.

### 3.6.1. Representations of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ and Small Cycles

We denote a set of 4 vertices inducing a sub-pair isomorphic to ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ) as an ordered quadruple where the first vertex is one of the endpoints of the the induced $P_{4}$, the second vertex is its neighbor and so on. $(p, q, r, s)$ is a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ whenever $\{p, q, r, s\}$ induces a sub-pair $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ and $p, s$ are the endpoints of the induced sub-path isomorphic to $P_{4}$. Clearly, $(p, q, r, s)=(s, r, q, p)$.

We start with a Lemma that characterize representations of ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ) pairs in general. This lemma will be useful in developing our results. Then we present the unique minimal representation of $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ pairs containing a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. Together with Lemma 3.27 this completes the characterization of all the $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ pairs because a $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ satisfies ( $P 3$ ) vacuously. We continue by proving more properties of minimal representations of induce $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ sub-pairs of pairs $(G, C)$ with at least 6 vertices. Using these properties we show that a $\left(G, C_{6}\right)$ satisfying $(P 3)$ does not contain subpairs isomorphic to $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$.

Lemma 3.31. Let $K=(i, i+1, i+2, i+3)$ be a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right),\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation of $K$, and $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} P_{i} \cap P_{i+1} \cap P_{i+2} \cap P_{i+3}$. There is a path core $(K)$ of $T$ with endpoints $u, v$ such that:
(i) $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+2}\right)=\{u\}$, $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i+3}\right)=\{v\}, P_{i+1}$ (resp. $P_{i+2}$ ) does not cross $u$ (resp. v).
(ii) $\emptyset \neq \bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K} \subseteq\left(P_{i+1} \cap P_{i+2}\right) \subseteq \operatorname{core}(K)$. In particular $u \neq v$.
(iii) At least one of $P_{i}, P_{i+3}$ crosses both endpoints of $\operatorname{core}(K)$ and $\emptyset \neq \operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+3}\right) \subseteq$ $\{u, v\}$.
(iv) $P_{i+1} \cup P_{i+2}$ crosses both endpoints of core $(K)$.
(v) The removal of the edges of $P_{i+1} \cup P_{i+2}$ from $T$ disconnects $P_{i}$ from $P_{i+3}$.

Proof. (i) Assume, by way of contradiction, that $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+2}\right)\right|=2$. Let these two vertices be $w, w^{\prime}$. As $P_{i+1} \sim P_{i}$ and $P_{i+1} \sim P_{i+2}$ we conclude that $P_{i+1} \subseteq p_{T}\left(w, w^{\prime}\right)$. $P_{i+3} \nsim P_{i+1}$ therefore $P_{i+3}$ splits from $P_{i+1}$ in at least one vertex $w^{\prime \prime}$ that is an intermediate vertex of $p_{T}\left(w, w^{\prime}\right)$. Then $P_{i+3}$ splits from $P_{i+2}$ at $w^{\prime \prime}$ contradicting the fact that $\{i+2, i+3\}$ is an ENPT edge. Therefore $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+2}\right)\right|=1$ and by symmetry, $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i+3}\right)\right|=1$. Let $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+2}\right)=\{u\}$ and $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i+3}\right)=\{v\}$. We define $\operatorname{core}(K)=p_{T}(u, v)$. For the rest of the claim, assume by contradiction that $P_{i+1}$ crosses $u$. Then either $P_{i+1} \nsim P_{i}$ or $P_{i+1} \nsim P_{i+2}$, contradicting the the fact that $\{i, i+1\}$ and $\{i+1, i+2\}$ are ENPT edges.

At this point we can uniquely define the following edges that will be used in the rest of the proof: $e_{i}$ (resp. $e_{i+2}$ ) is the edge of $P_{i} \backslash P_{i+2}$ (resp. $P_{i+2} \backslash P_{i}$ ) incident to $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+2}\right)$, and $e_{i+1}$ and $e_{i+3}$ are defined similarly. Note that $e_{i} \neq e_{i+2}$ and $e_{i+1} \neq$ $e_{i+3}$, but the definition does not exclude the possibility that, for instance $e_{i}=e_{i+1}$.
(ii) A claw-clique of size 4 contains exactly one ENPT edge, however a path isomorphic to $P_{4}$ contains three edges. Therefore the representation of $K_{4}$ is an edgeclique. Let $e$ be an edge defining this edge-clique, i.e. $e \in \bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$. The removal of $e$ from $T$ disconnects it into two subtrees. In order to prove that $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K} \subseteq \operatorname{core}(K)$ it suffices to show that $u$ and $v$ are in different subtrees. Assume, by way of contradiction that $u, v$ are in the same subtree $T_{r}$ with root $r$ where $r$ is an endpoint of $e$. Let $r^{\prime}$ be the least common ancestor of $u, v$ in $T_{r}$ (possibly $u=v$ in which case $r^{\prime}=u=v$ ). All the 4 paths contain $e$ and cross $r^{\prime}$ (so that each one crosses at least one of $u, v$ ), i.e. they "enter"
$r^{\prime}$ from the same edge $e^{\prime}$ (where possibly $r^{\prime}=r$ and $e^{\prime}=e$ ). If $r^{\prime} \notin\{u, v\}$ then as $P_{i+1}$ crosses $v$ and $P_{i+2}$ crosses $u, r^{\prime} \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i+2}\right)$, contradicting $P_{i+1} \sim P_{i+2}$. Therefore we can assume without loss of generality that $r^{\prime}=u$. Then the edges $e_{i}$ and $e_{i+2}$ are incident to $r^{\prime}$. Then $P_{i+1}$ (resp. $P_{i+3}$ ) contains $e_{i}$ (resp. $e_{i+2}$ ) because $P_{i+1} \sim P_{i}$ (resp. $\left.P_{i+3} \sim P_{i+2}\right)$. Therefore $r^{\prime} \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i+2}\right)$, contradicting $P_{i+1} \sim P_{i+2}$. Therefore $u$ and $v$ are in different subtrees, i.e. $e \in p_{T}(u, v)=\operatorname{core}(K)$. As $e$ can be any edge defining the edge-clique this implies that $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K} \subseteq \operatorname{core}(K)$. It remains to prove that $P_{i+1} \cap P_{i+2} \subseteq \operatorname{core}(K)$. For this purpose, it is sufficient to show that both of $P_{i+1}$ and $P_{i+2}$ have one endpoint in core $(K)$. Indeed, assume without loss of generality that $P_{i+1}$ does not have an endpoint in $\operatorname{core}(K)$. Then $P_{i+1}$ crosses $u$ and does not include at least one of the edges $e_{i}, e_{i+2}$. Therefore $P_{i+1} \nsim P_{i}$ or $P_{i+1} \nsim P_{i+2}$, a contradiction.

Consult Figure 3.15 for the rest of the proof.
(iii) By the above discussion $u$ (resp. $v$ ) is an intermediate vertex of $P_{i}$ and $P_{i+2}$ (resp. $P_{i+1}$ and $P_{i+3}$ ), and they all intersect in at least one edge $e \in \operatorname{core}(K)$. In order to see the first part of the claim assume, by way of contradiction, that both of $P_{i}$ and $P_{i+3}$ have an endpoint in $\operatorname{core}(K)$, in this case $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is between these two endpoints. Therefore $P_{i} \sim P_{i+3}$, a contradiction.

We now proceed to show the rest of the claim: Let $w \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+3}\right) . e_{i} \notin P_{i+3}$ because otherwise $P_{i+3} \nsim P_{i+2}$, and by symmetry $e_{i+3} \notin P_{i}$. Therefore, $w$ is on $\operatorname{core}(K)$. On the other hand $w$ is not an intermediate vertex of $\operatorname{core}(K)$. Indeed, consider the two sub-paths obtained by removing $e$ from $\operatorname{core}(K)$. If $w$ is an intermediate vertex of $\operatorname{core}(K)$, then at least one of $P_{i+3} \nsim P_{i+2}, P_{i} \nsim P_{i+1}$ holds, depending on the sub-path $w$ belongs. We conclude $w \in\{u, v\}$. Together with $P_{i} \nsim P_{i+3}$, this implies the claim. Note that $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+3}\right)=\{u, v\}$ if and only if both of $P_{i}$ and $P_{i+3}$ cross both endpoints $u, v$ of $\operatorname{core}(K)$.
(iv) As $\{i+1, i+2\}$ is an ENPT edge, $Q \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} P_{i+1} \cup P_{i+2}$ is a path. Moreover, $e_{i+1} \in P_{i+1}$ and $e_{i+2} \in P_{i+2}$, therefore $\left\{e_{i+1}, e_{i+2}\right\} \subseteq Q$, implying the claim.
(v) It suffices to show that $\operatorname{core}(K)$ separates $P_{i}$ and $P_{i+3}$. Suppose that after the removal of $\operatorname{core}(K)$ the two paths still intersect. This is possible only if $e_{i+3} \in P_{i}$ or $e_{i} \in P_{i+3}$. Assume without loss of generality that $e_{i+3} \in P_{i}$. Then $P_{i} \nsim P_{i+1}$, a contradiction.


Figure 3.15. Representations of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs where $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i}+3\right)=\{u, v\}$ and $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i}+3\right) \subsetneq\{u, v\}$, respectively.

Pairs $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ with induced $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs are different than bigger cycles in a few respects. Therefore we analyse this case separately. We recall that a pair ( $G, C_{5}$ ) satisfies ( $P 3$ ) vacuously, and that in Section 3.5.2 we found the unique minimal representation of a pair $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ that satisfies $(P 2)$. We now investigate the representation of a pair $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ that does not satisfy $(P 2)$.

Theorem 3.32. If $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ does not satisfy $(P 2)$ then (i) $G$ is isomorphic to the graph depicted in Figure 3.16, and (ii) $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ has a unique minimal representation also depicted in Figure 3.16.

Proof. Assume without loss of generality $K=(0,1,2,3)$ is a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$, and let $\operatorname{core}(K)=P_{T} u, v$. If $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)=\{u, v\}$ then $P_{4} \subseteq \operatorname{core}(K)$, implying that $P_{4} \sim P_{1}$ or $P_{4} \sim P_{2}$, i.e. at least one of $\{1,4\}$ or $\{2,4\}$ is an ENPT edge, a contradiction.

Assume without loss of generality $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)=\{u\}$, and that $P_{3}$ crosses both $u$ and $v$. Then $P_{0}$ has one endpoint $u^{\prime}$ in $\operatorname{core}(K)$, and $P_{0} \cap P_{3}=p_{T}\left(u, u^{\prime}\right)$.

As $P_{4} \sim P_{0}$ and $P_{4} \sim P_{3}$, we have $P_{4} \sim p_{T}\left(u, u^{\prime}\right)$ and $P_{4}$ does cross $u$. Therefore $P_{4}$ intersects core $(K)$. By Lemma 3.31 (iv) $\operatorname{core}(K) \subseteq P_{1} \cup P_{2}$. We conclude that
$P_{4} \cap\left(P_{1} \cup P_{2}\right) \neq \emptyset$, i.e. $P_{4} \cap P_{1} \neq \emptyset$ or $P_{4} \cap P_{2} \neq \emptyset$. As $\{4,1\}$ and $\{4,2\}$ are not ENPT edges, we have that $P_{4} \nsim P_{1}$ or $P_{4} \nsim P_{2}$. On the other hand $P_{4}$ does not cross $u$ and by Lemma 3.31 (i), $P_{2}$ does not cross $v$, thus $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{2}, P_{4}\right)=\emptyset$. Therefore $P_{4} \nsim P_{1}$ and $P_{4} \| P_{2}$. Moreover, $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{4}, P_{1}\right)=\{v\}$, i.e. $P_{4}$ crosses $v$. Therefore one endpoint $u^{\prime \prime}$ of $P_{4}$ is in $p_{T}\left(u, u^{\prime}\right)$, and must be between $u^{\prime}$ and the endpoint of $P_{1}$ in $\operatorname{core}(K)$.

It is easy to see that the path $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ can be contracted to one edge $e$ without affecting the relationships between the paths. Similarly, any edge between $u$ and $e$, and any edge between $e$ and $u^{\prime \prime}$ can be contracted. The path $p_{T}\left(u^{\prime}, u^{\prime \prime}\right)$ can be contracted to one edge, and the path $p_{T}\left(u^{\prime}, v\right)$ can be contracted to a single vertex $v$. This leads to the representation in Figure 3.16.


Figure 3.16. The unique ( $G, C_{5}$ ) pair that does not satisfy $(P 2)$ and its unique minimal representation.

We now observe a property of the representations of $\left(G, C_{5}\right)$ in order to demonstrate the first family of non-ENPT graphs.

Theorem 3.33. $G+C_{5}$ is not an ENPT graph whenever $G$ is not a complete graph.

Proof. A pair $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{5}\right)$ satisfies ( $P 3$ ) vacuously. If $\left(G^{\prime}, C_{5}\right)$ satisfies ( $P 2$ ) then by Lemma 3.27, its unique minimal representation is the one depicted in Figure 3.12. Otherwise, by Theorem 3.32, its unique minimal representation is the one depicted in Figure 3.16. Let $i \in V(G) . i$ is adjacent to every vertex of $C_{5}$. We observe that in both cases above (i) $P_{i}$ is a sub-path of $p_{T}(u, v)$, and (ii) there is a specific edge $e$ of $p_{T}(u, v)$ that is also in $P_{i}$. Therefore, for any two vertices $i, j \in V(G) P_{i}$ and $P_{j}$ are intersecting sub-paths of $p_{T}(u, v)$, thus $P_{i} \sim P_{j}$. We conclude that $G$ is a complete graph.

We now extend Lemma 3.31. As opposed to Lemma 3.31 that investigates the structure of a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ regardless of any specific context, the next lemma provides us with further properties of minimal representations satisfying $(P 3)$ of pairs $(G, C)$.

Lemma 3.34. Let $K=(i, i+1, i+2, i+3)$ be a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of a pair $(G, C)$ satisfying (P3) with at least 6 vertices. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a minimal representation of $(G, C)$ and let $\mathcal{P}_{K}=\left\{P_{i}: i \in K\right\}$.
(i) $\cap \mathcal{P}_{K}=\{e\}$ for some edge $e$ which is used exclusively by the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$, i.e. $e \in P_{j} \Rightarrow j \in K$.
(ii) e divides $T$ into two subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}$ such that $T_{1}$ is a cherry of $<T, \mathcal{P}_{K}>$ with center $w_{1}$. We denote this subtree as cherry $(K)$.
(iii) $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i}, P_{i+3}\right)=\left\{w_{2}\right\} \subseteq V\left(T_{2}\right)$.
(iv) $N_{G}(j)=K$ if and only if $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{j}, P_{i}\right) \cup \operatorname{split}\left(P_{j}, P_{i+3}\right)=\left\{w_{1}\right\}$. The unique vertex $j$ satisfying this condition is one of $i+1, i+2$.

Proof. Consult Figure 3.17 for this proof.
(i) Let without loss of generality $i=0$. By Lemma $3.31, \bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is not empty. By contradiction assume that a path $P_{j} \notin \mathcal{P}_{K}$ intersects $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$. Then $K \cup\{j\}$ is an edgeclique of $G$. We claim that this $K_{5}$ contains at least one red triangle, contradicting $(P 3)$. Indeed, as $C$ has at least 6 vertices, $j$ is adjacent in $C$ to at most one vertex $k \in\{0,3\} . K \backslash\{k\}$ contains one red edge. The endpoints of this edge together with $j$ constitute a red edge-clique. Therefore, no path of $\mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{K}$ intersects $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$. Then no intermediate vertex of $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a split vertex. By the minimality of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle, \bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ consists of one edge, say $e$.
(ii) Let $T_{1}, T_{2}$ be the subtrees obtained by the removal of $e$ from $T$. As $V(G) \backslash K$ is a connected component of $G$, the union of the paths $\mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a subtree $T^{\prime}$ of $T$. $T^{\prime}$ is a subtree of $T_{1}$ or a subtree of $T_{2}$, because otherwise there is at least one path of $\mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{K}$ using $e$, contradicting (i). Without loss of generality let $T_{2}$ be the subtree containing $T^{\prime}$, and $T_{1}$ be the subtree that intersects only paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$. By Lemma 3.31 (ii), $T_{1}$ contains exactly one endpoint of $\operatorname{core}(K)$. For $i \in\{1,2\}$, let $w_{i}$ be the endpoint
of $\operatorname{core}(K)$ that is in $T_{i} . w_{1}$ is the only split vertex in $T_{1}$ because it contains only paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$. As the representation is minimal, there are no edges between $e$ and $w_{1}$, as otherwise they could be contracted. Any subtree of $T_{1}$ starting with an edge incident to $w_{1}$ can be contracted to one path because the subtree does not contain split vertices. Moreover this path can be contracted to one edge, because all the paths entering the subtree intersect in its first edge. There are only two such subtrees, therefore $T_{1}$ is isomorphic to $P_{3}$ and $w_{1}$ is its center.
(iii) Assume that $\left|\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)\right|=2$. Then by Lemma 3.31, $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)=$ $\left\{w_{1}, w_{2}\right\}$, i.e. $w_{1}$ is an internal vertex of both $P_{0}$ and $P_{3}$. In this case, one can remove from $P_{0}$ its unique edge in $T_{1}$ without affecting the relationships between the paths. This contradicts the minimality of $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Indeed, (i) any change in $T_{1}$ affects relationships between paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ only, (ii) $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is not affected, therefore all the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ still intersect, (iii) $\left\{w_{1}\right\}=\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)=\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{2}\right)$ and $\left\{w_{2}\right\}=\operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right)$ hold after the tail removal.

Now assume that $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)=\left\{w_{1}\right\}$. $P_{0}$ crosses $w_{2}$ because $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{2}\right)=$ $\left\{w_{2}\right\}$. Then $P_{3}$ does not cross $w_{2}$. As $P_{4} \sim P_{3}, P_{4}, P_{2}, P_{0}$ intersect in the last edge of $P_{3}$, and thus constitute a red edge-clique, contradicting $(P 3)$. We conclude that $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{0}, P_{3}\right)=\left\{w_{2}\right\}$.
(iv) First assume $j \notin\{i+1, i+2\}$. Clearly, $N_{G}(j) \neq K$. Moreover, we have $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{j}, P_{i}\right) \cup \operatorname{split}\left(P_{j}, P_{i+3}\right) \neq\left\{w_{1}\right\}$. Indeed, if $j \notin K$ then $w_{1}$ is not a vertex of $P_{j}$ and if $j \in\{i, i+3\}$ the condition holds because (iii).

We now assume $j \in\{i+1, i+2\}$. By Lemma 3.31 (v), the removal of $P_{1} \cup P_{2}$ disconnects $P_{0}$ from $P_{3}$. Then the tree $T^{\prime}$ intersects $P_{1} \cup P_{2}$. Therefore, at least one of $P_{1}, P_{2}$ intersects $T^{\prime}$. By Lemma 3.31 i) one of $P_{1}, P_{2}$ does not cross $w_{2}$, i.e. does not intersect $T_{2}$ which in turn includes $T^{\prime}$, a contradiction. We conclude that exactly one of $P_{1}, P_{2}$ intersects $T^{\prime}$. In other words exactly one of 1,2 is adjacent to $V(G) \backslash K$. Assume $N_{G}(i+1)=K$. Then $P_{i+1} \cap T_{1} \neq \emptyset$, therefore $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i}\right)=\emptyset$, i.e. $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{i+1}, P_{i+3}\right)=$ $\left\{w_{1}\right\}$, concluding the claim. The case $N_{G}(i+2)=K$ is symmetric.


Figure 3.17. A minimal representation of a pair $(G, C)$ with an induced ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ) with $N_{G}(i+1)=K$.

We term, as isolated, the vertex $j \in\{i+1, i+2\}$ of $K=(i, i+1, i+2, i+3)$ satisfying $N_{G}(j)=K$ whose existence and uniqueness are guaranteed by Lemma 3.34 (iv). We recall that $(i, i+1, i+2, i+3)=(i+3, i+2, i+1, i)$, and in view of this result, we introduce an alternative notation: We denote $K$ as $[i, i+1, i+2, i+3]$ if $i+1$ is its isolated vertex, and as $[i+3, i+2, i+1, i]$ otherwise.

Lemma 3.35. Let $K=[i, i+1, i+2, i+3] a\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of a pair $(G, C)$ with at least 6 vertices, $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ a minimal representation of $(G, C)$ satisfying $(P 3)$. If there is a path $P_{j} \notin \mathcal{P}_{K}$ intersecting core $(K)$, then $j=i-1$ and $|\operatorname{core}(K)|=2$, otherwise $|\operatorname{core}(K)|=1$.

Proof. Let $\bigcap \mathcal{P}_{K}=\{e\}$, and assume that $j \notin K$ and $P_{j} \cap \operatorname{core}(K) \neq \emptyset$. Recall that $e \notin$ $P_{j}$. If $P_{j}$ splits from core $(K)$ then it splits from each one of $P_{i}, P_{i+2}, P_{i+3}$. In particular $\{j, i, i+2\}$ constitutes a red edge-clique, thus violating ( $P 3$ ). If $P_{j} \subseteq \operatorname{core}(K)$ then $P_{j} \sim P_{i+2}$ implying $j \in\{i+1, i+3\} \subset K$, contradicting our assumption. Therefore $P_{j}$ crosses the endpoint $w_{2}$ of $\operatorname{core}(K)$. Then $P_{j}$ intersects with each one of $P_{i}, P_{i+2}, P_{i+3}$ in the last edge of $\operatorname{core}(K)$. Therefore (i) $P_{j} \nsim P_{i+2}$ because $j \notin\{i+1, i+3\}$, and (ii) $P_{i} \nsim P_{i+2}$. If $P_{j} \nsim P_{i}$ then $\{j, i, i+2\}$ constitutes a red edge-clique, violating ( $P 3$ ). Therefore $P_{j} \sim P_{i}$, implying $j=i-1$. Note that $P_{i+1} \cap P_{i-1}=\emptyset$ because $i+1$ is isolated. $P_{i-1} \cap \operatorname{core}(K)$ consists of a single edge $e^{\prime}(\neq e)$, because otherwise they can be contracted to a single edge without affecting the relationships between the paths $P_{i-1}, P_{i}, P_{i+2}, P_{i+3}$ that are the only paths that intersect the contracted edges. Then core $(K)$ consists of the two edges $e, e^{\prime}$. If $P_{i-1}$ does not intersect core $(K)$ then $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ are the only paths that intersect core $(K)$. Therefore, all the edges of $\operatorname{core}(K)$ can be
contracted to one edge.

Lemma 3.36. A pair $(G, C)$ with 6 vertices satisfying ( $P 3$ ) does not contain an induced $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$.

Proof. Assume without loss of generality that $[0,1,2,3]$ is a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $(G, C)$. Let $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation of $(G, C)$ satisfying (P3). For $i \in\{0,3\}$ let $T_{i}$ be the unique connected component of $T \backslash \operatorname{core}(K)$ intersecting $P_{i}$. By Lemma 3.35, $P_{4}$ does not cross $w_{2}$. Therefore $P_{4}$ is completely in $T_{3}$. As $P_{4} \cap P_{5} \neq \emptyset, P_{5}$ intersects $T_{3}$. If $P_{5}$ is completely in $T_{3}$ then $P_{5} \| P_{0}$, otherwise $P_{5} \nsim P_{0}$. Both cases contradict the fact that $\{5,0\}$ is an edge of $C$.

### 3.6.2. Intersection of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs and Aggressive Contraction

We now focus on pairs with at least 7 vertices. We start by analyzing the intersection of their $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ sub-pairs.

Lemma 3.37. Let $(G, C)$ be a pair with at least 7 vertices satisfying ( $P 3$ ), and $K=$ $[i, i+1, i+2, i+3] a\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $(G, C)$. Then
(i) there is at most one $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right), K^{\prime} \neq K$ such that $E(C[K]) \cap E\left(C\left[K^{\prime}\right]\right) \neq \emptyset$ and if such a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ exists then $K^{\prime}=[i+5, i+4, i+3, i+2]$ (and therefore $\{i+2, i+4\}$ is an edge of $G$ );
(ii) if $\{i+2, i+4\}$ is an edge of $G$ then $K^{\prime}=[i+5, i+4, i+3, i+2]$ induces a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $(G, C)$.

Proof. Let without loss of generality $i=0$.
(i) Since 1 is isolated, $1 \notin K^{\prime}$. Therefore if $E(C[K]) \cap E\left(C\left[K^{\prime}\right]\right) \neq \emptyset$ for some $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right) K^{\prime}$ then $E(C[K]) \cap E\left(C\left[K^{\prime}\right]\right)=\{\{2, i\}\}$, i.e. $K^{\prime}=(2,3,4,5)$. As 3 is adjacent to 1,3 is not isolated in $K^{\prime}$. Therefore, $K^{\prime}=[5,4,3,2]$.
(ii) Assume $\{2,4\}$ is an edge of $G$ and that, by way of contradiction, $K^{\prime}=$
$\{2,3,4,5\}$ is not a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. Consult Figure 3.18 for the following discussion. For $j \in\{0,3\}$ let $T_{j}$ be the connected component of $T \backslash \operatorname{core}(K)$ intersecting $P_{j}$. As $P_{4} \sim P_{3}$, Lemma 3.35 implies that $P_{4}$ is completely in $T_{3} . P_{4} \nsim P_{2}$, by our assumption. Let $w_{3}$ be the endpoint of $P_{3}$ in $T_{3}$ and $w_{4}$ be the split vertex of $P_{2}$ and $P_{4}$. Then $w_{3} \in p_{T}\left(w_{2}, w_{4}\right)$ (possibly $w_{3}=w_{4}$ ). $P_{5}$ does not intersect at least one of $P_{2}$ and $P_{3}$, because otherwise $K^{\prime}$ is a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. Then it does not intersect $P_{3}$. The union of the paths $P_{6}, \ldots P_{n-1}$ constitutes a subtree $T^{\prime}$ of $T$ that intersects both $P_{0}$ and $P_{5}$. Therefore there is at least one path $P_{j} \in\left\{P_{6}, \ldots P_{n-1}\right\}$ crossing the last edge of $P_{3}$ (incident to $w_{3}$ ). Then $\{2,4, j\}$ is an edge-clique defined by this edge. Moreover, (i) $P_{2} \nsim P_{4}$, (ii) $P_{j} \nsim P_{2}$ because $j \notin\{1,3\}, P_{j} \nsim P_{4}$ because $j \notin\{3,5\}$. Therefore $\{2,4, j\}$ is a red edge-clique, contradicting the assumption that $(P 3)$ is satisfied.


Figure 3.18. Proof of Lemma 3.37.

By the above lemma ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ) sub-pairs may intersect only in pairs. We term two intersecting $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs as twins, and a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ not intersecting with another as a single $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$.

Given a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right) K=[i, i+1, i+2, i+3]$ of a pair $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ satisfying ( $P 3$ ), the aggressive contraction operation is the replacement of the vertices $i+2, i+3$ by a single vertex $(i+2) .(i+3)$. We denote the resulting pair $\left(G^{\prime \prime}{ }_{l e}, C^{\prime \prime}{ }^{/ e}\right)($ where $e=\{i+2, i+3\})$ as $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)_{/ K}$. The following lemma characterizes the aggressive contraction operation in the representation domain.

Lemma 3.38. Let $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ be a pair with at least 7 vertices, $\left\langle T^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$ be a representation of it satisfying (P3), and $K=[i, i+1, i+2, i+3]$ be a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ of $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$. Then: $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)_{/ K}$ is a pair satisfying $(P 3)$ and a representation $\left\langle T^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ of $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)=\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)_{/ K}$ satisfying (P3) is obtained from $\left\langle T^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$ by first removing cherry $(K)$ and also cherry $\left(K^{\prime}\right)$ if $K$ and $K^{\prime}$ are twins, and then applying the union operation to $P_{i+2}$ and $P_{i+3}$.

Proof. Let without loss of generality $i=0$. Recall that by Lemma 3.37, $\{2,4\}$ is an edge of $G^{\prime \prime}$, if and only if $K$ is a twin. Figure 3.19 illustrates the following two steps in the case that $K$ is a single.
(Step 1) We remove cherry $(K)$ (and also cherry $\left(K^{\prime}\right)$ when $K$ and $K^{\prime}$ are twins) from $T^{\prime \prime}$. By Lemma 3.34 we know that by removing cherries we don't lose any edge intersection, and we loose exactly one split vertex per cherry, namely the center of the cherry. This vertex (or vertices) is $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{1}, P_{3}\right)$ (and also $\operatorname{split}\left(P_{2}, P_{4}\right)$ when $K$ is a twin). Thus the edge $\{1,3\}$ (and also $\{2,4\}$ when $K$ is a twin) becomes blue. As no new red edges are introduced, the resulting representation does not contain red edge-cliques, i.e. satisfies ( $P 3$ ).
(Step 2) We contract the resulting graph on the edge $\{2,3\}$. We claim that this contraction is defined. Indeed assume by contradiction that $\{2,3\}$ participates in a $B B R$ triangle. This $B B R$ triangle is one of $\{1,2,3\}$ and $\{2,3,4\}$. Then one of $\{1,3\}$ and $\{2,4\}$ is a red edge, contradicting the fact that these edges (if exist) becomes blue after step 1. This contraction corresponds to the union operation on the paths $P_{2}, P_{3}$, and by Lemma 3.24 the resulting graph satisfies ( $P 3$ ).

### 3.6.3. Algorithm

Lemma 3.38 implies an algorithm for finding the unique minimal representation of pairs satisfying ( $P 3$ ). Algorithm FindMinimalRep-P3 is a recursive algorithm that processes a single $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ or a twin of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ s at every invocation. The processing is done by applying aggressive contraction to convert the involved $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ (s) to $\left(K_{3}, P_{3}\right)$


Figure 3.19. Aggressive contraction of a single ( $K_{4}, P_{4}$ ).


Figure 3.20. Aggressive contraction of twins.
(s), solving the problem recursively, and finally transforming the representation of the $\left(K_{3}, P_{3}\right)$ to a representation of a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$. In the Build Representation phase, Algorithm FindMinimalREp-P3 performs the reversal of steps 1 and 2 described in Lemma 3.38, (see Figures 3.19, 3.20).

A broken tour with cherries is a representation obtained by adding cherries to a broken tour.

Theorem 3.39. P3-HamiltonianPairRec can be solved in polynomial time. "YES" instances have a unique solution, and whenever $n \geq 6$ this solution is a broken planar tour with cherries.

Proof. As the case $\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right|<6$ is already solved, we will show that for any given pair ( $G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}$ ) with $\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right| \geq 6$, FindMinimalRep-P3 solves P3-HamiltonianPairRec. If ( $G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}$ ) is a "NO" instance, then the instance has no representation satisfying (P3). In this case then the algorithm returns "NO" at the validation phase. Therefore we assume that $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ is a "YES" instance, and prove the claim by induction on the number $k$ of induced $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs of $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$.

If $k=0$ then $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ does not contain any $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs, therefore satisfies $(P 2)$. In this case the algorithm invokes FindMinRep-P2-P3 and the claim follows from Theorem 3.30.

Otherwise $k>0$. We assume that the claim holds for any $k^{\prime}<k$ and prove that it holds for $k$. In this case, as the pair contains at least one $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$, one such pair $K$ is chosen arbitrarily by the algorithm and aggressively contracted. The resulting pair $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)=\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)_{/ K}$ has the following properties:

- Satisfies (P3). (By Lemma 3.38)
- The number of $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$ pairs is less then $k$.
- $\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right| \geq 6$. This is because $\left|V\left(G^{\prime}\right)\right|=\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right|-1$ and $\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right|>6$. Indeed, if $\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right|=6$, we have $k=0$ by Lemma 3.36.

Require: $C^{\prime \prime}=\left\{0,1, \ldots,\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right|-1\right\}$ is an Hamiltonian cycle of $G^{\prime \prime}$ and $\left|V\left(G^{\prime \prime}\right)\right| \geq 6$
Ensure: A minimal representation $\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle$ of $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ satisfying $(P 3)$ if any
if $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ is $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right)$-free then
return FindMinREp-P2-P3 $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{W}\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)\right)$

## Aggressive Contraction:

Pick a $\left(K_{4}, P_{4}\right), K=[i, i+1, i+2, i+3]$ of $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$. $\triangleright$ Renumber vertices if necessary.
$\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right) \leftarrow\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)_{/ K}$.

## Recurse:

$\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle \leftarrow$ FindMinimalRep-P3 $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$.

## Build Representation:

$\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle \leftarrow\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle$.
Replace $P_{(i+2) \cdot(i+3)}$ by two copies $P_{i+2}$ and $P_{i+3}$ of itself.
if $i+2$ is adjacent to $i+4$ in $G^{\prime \prime}$ then
$\triangleright K^{\prime}=[i+5, i+4, i+3, i+2]$ is the twin of $K$ in $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$
$\operatorname{MakeCherry}(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle, i+4, i+2)$.
else $\triangleright K$ is a single
$w \leftarrow$ the endpoint of $P_{i+2}$ which is not in core $(K)$.
AdjustEndpoint $\left(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle, G^{\prime \prime}, P_{i+2}, w\right)$.
$\operatorname{MakeCherry}(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle, i+1, i+3)$.
Validate:
if $\operatorname{Ept}(\overline{\mathcal{P}})=G^{\prime \prime}$ and $\overline{\mathcal{P}}$ satisfies $(P 3)$ then
return $\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle$
else
return "NO"
function MakeCherry $(\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle, p, q)$
Let $v \in V(\bar{T})$ be the common endpoint of $P_{p}, P_{q}$.
Add two new vertices $v^{\prime}, v^{\prime \prime}$ and two edges $\left\{v, v^{\prime}\right\},\left\{v, v^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ to $\bar{T}$.
Extend $P_{p}$ so that the endpoint $v$ is moved to $v^{\prime}$.
Extend $P_{q}$ so that the endpoint $v$ is moved to $v^{\prime \prime}$.
Figure 3.21. FindMinimalRep-P3 $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)$ algorithm.

Therefore, $\left(G^{\prime}, C^{\prime}\right)$ satisfies the assumptions of the inductive hypothesis. Then, $\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is the unique minimal representation of $\left(G^{\prime \prime}, C^{\prime \prime}\right)_{/ K}$ satisfying $(P 3)$. It remains to show that the representation $\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is obtained from the representation $\langle\bar{T}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}\rangle$ returned by the algorithm, by applying the steps described in Lemma 3.38.

Let without loss of generality $K=[i, i+1, i+2, i+3]$. By Lemma 3.37, $K$ has a twin $K^{\prime}=[i+5, i+4, i+3, i+3]$ if and only if $\{i+2, i+4\}$ is an edge of $G^{\prime \prime}$. The algorithm checks the existence of this edge and takes two different actions, accordingly.

If $K$ is not a twin then step 2, i.e. the union operation is reversed by breaking apart the path $P_{(i+2) .(i+3)}$ into two paths $P_{i+2}$ and $P_{i+3}$. Then step 1 is reversed by invoking procedure MakeCherry (see Figure 3.19).

If $K$ is a twin, then cherry $(K)$ and cherry $\left(K^{\prime}\right)$ are uniquely determined by Lemma 3.34 (ii) and procedure MakeCherry acts accordingly. This determines all the endpoints of $P_{i}, P_{i+1}, P_{i+2}, P_{i+3}, P_{i+4}, P_{i+5}$ that are different from the representation $\left\langle\bar{T}^{\prime}, \overline{\mathcal{P}}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ (see Figure 3.20).

### 3.7. General Pairs $(G, C)$

In this section we show that it is impossible to generalize the algorithms presented in the previous sections to the case where $(P 3)$ does not hold, unless $\mathrm{P}=\mathrm{NP}$.

We start with a definition and a related lemma that are central to this section. Given a pair $\left(G, G^{\prime}\right)$ and a subset $S$ of $V(G)$, the component graph $\operatorname{comp}\left(G, G^{\prime}, S\right)$ is a graph whose vertices correspond to the connected components $G_{1}, G_{2}, \ldots$ of $G \backslash S$ and two vertices corresponding to components $G_{i}, G_{j}$ are connected by an edge if and only if there is a vertex $v \in S$ adjacent to both of $G_{i}$ and $G_{j}$ in $G^{\prime}$ (see Figure 3.23 for an example). Whenever $G^{\prime}$ is a cycle we term a connected component of $G^{\prime} \backslash S$ an arc of $G^{\prime}$ separated by $S$. Clearly, whenever $|S| \geq 2$ every arc is adjacent to exactly 2 vertices of $S$.

Lemma 3.40. Let $(G, C)$ be a pair where $C$ is a Hamiltonian cycle of $G$, and $K$ be a maximal clique of $G \backslash C$. If there is a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of $G$ where $\Delta(T) \leq 3$, then $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ is 3 -colorable.

Proof. If $|K| \leq 3, G \backslash K$ has at most 3 connected components, thus $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ is 3 -colorable. Therefore we assume $|K|>3$. If $K$ is an edge-clique defined by an edge $e$ then the paths $\mathcal{P}_{K}=\left\{P_{v}: v \in K\right\}$ are exactly the paths in $\mathcal{P}$ that contain $e$. The edge $e$ divides $T$ into two subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}$ rooted at the endpoints $r_{1}, r_{2}$ of $e$. Similarly, if $K$ is a claw-clique defined by a claw $\left\{e_{1}, e_{2}, e_{3}\right\}$, as $T$ has maximum degree 3 , the claw divides the tree into three subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}, T_{3}$, rooted at the center $r_{1}=r_{2}=r_{3}=r$ of the claw. In both cases the following two statements hold: (i) every path of $\mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is contained in one of these subtrees, (ii) every path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ that intersects a subtree $T_{i}$ crosses its root $r_{i}$.

All the vertices of a connected component $G_{i}$ are represented by paths that are in the same subtree $T_{j}(j \in\{1,2,3\})$. This is because otherwise there are at least two adjacent vertices in $G_{i}$ that are in two different subtrees, a contradiction. We color every vertex $G_{i}$ of $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ with color $j \in\{1,2,3\}$ depending on the subtree on which the paths representing its vertices reside. It remains to show that if two connected components are adjacent in $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ they are colored with different colors.

Assume by contradiction that two components $G_{1}, G_{2}$ of $G \backslash K$ which are adjacent in $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ are colored with the same color $i$. Then, there is a vertex $v \in K$ and two vertices $v_{1} \in G_{1}, v_{2} \in G_{2}$ adjacent to $v$ in $C$. Moreover $v_{1}$ and $v_{2}$ are not adjacent in $G$, because they are in different connected components. Therefore, (i) $P_{v} \sim P_{v_{1}}, P_{v} \sim P_{v_{2}}$, (ii) $P_{v_{1}} \| P_{v_{2}}$, (iii) $P_{v_{1}}$ and $P_{v_{2}}$ are in $T_{i}$, (iv) $P_{v}$ intersects $T_{i}$ and crosses its root $r_{i}$. Furthermore, we assume without loss of generality that $P_{v_{1}}$ is closer to $r_{i}$ than $P_{v_{2}}$ (see Figure 3.22). Consider the subtree $T^{\prime}=\cup_{u \in G_{2}} P_{u}$ of $T_{i}$. $P_{v_{1}} \cap T^{\prime}=\emptyset$, because otherwise there is a path $P_{u}$ representing a vertex $u \in G_{2}$ that intersects $P_{v_{1}}$, in other words $u \in G_{2}$ is adjacent to $v_{1} \in G_{1}$, a contradiction. Let
$\left\{v, v^{\prime}\right\}$ be the vertices of $K$ adjacent to the arc $v_{2}$ belongs to. $P_{v^{\prime}}$ intersects $T_{i}$ and crosses its root $r_{i}$. Moreover, $P_{v^{\prime}}$ intersects $T^{\prime}$, as it is adjacent to at least one vertex of $G_{2}$. We conclude that $P_{v^{\prime}}$ contains $P_{v_{1}}$. Then $v_{1} \sim v^{\prime}$, i.e. $v^{\prime}$ and $v_{1}$ are adjacent in $C$. Therefore $K=\left\{v, v^{\prime}\right\}$, contradicting $|K|>3$.


Figure 3.22. Proof of Lemma 3.40.
Lemma 3.41. It is NP-hard to determine whether a given pair $(G, C)$ where $C$ is a Hamiltonian cycle of $G$ has representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ with $\Delta(T) \leq 3$.

Proof. The proof is by reduction from the 3 -colorability problem. Given a graph $H$, we transform it to a pair $(G, C)$ such that $(G, C)$ has a representation on a tree with maximum degree 3 if and only if $H$ is 3 -colorable.

Consult Figure 3.23 for the following construction. Let $V(H)=\left\{v_{0}, \ldots, v_{n-1}\right\}$, $E(H)=\left\{e_{0}, \ldots, e_{m-1}\right\}$, and let $d_{i}=d_{H}\left(v_{i}\right)$. The pair $(G, C)$ consists of 6 m vertices. For every edge $e_{k}=\left\{v_{i}, v_{j}\right\}$ we build a path $S_{k}=\left(u_{i, k}-u_{i, k}^{\prime}-u_{j, k}-u_{j, k}^{\prime}-\right.$ $\left.u_{k}-u_{k}^{\prime}\right)$ with 6 vertices. The graph $C$ is a cycle obtained by concatenating these $m$ paths, in the order $S_{0}, S_{1}, \ldots, S_{m-1}, S_{0}$, i.e. $u_{k}^{\prime}$ is connected to $u_{i^{\prime}, k+1}$ where $e_{k+1}=$ $\left\{v_{i^{\prime}}, v_{j^{\prime}}\right\} . K$ is a clique of all the vertices in the even positions of the paths, i.e. $K=\left\{u_{i, k}^{\prime}, u_{k}^{\prime}: 0<k<m, i \in e_{k}\right\}$ (most of the edges induced by $K$ are not shown in the figure). For every $i<n, Q_{i}$ is a path $\left(u_{i, k_{1}}-\cdots-u_{i, k_{d_{i}}}\right)$ where $e_{k_{1}}, \ldots, e_{k_{d_{i}}}$ are the edges incident to $v_{i}$ in $H$. The set $E_{i}^{K Q}$ of edges connects vertices of $Q_{i}$ with vertices of $K$. Specifically, $E_{i}^{K Q}=\left\{\left\{u_{i, k_{j}}, u_{i, k_{j^{\prime}}}^{\prime}\right\} \mid 1 \leq j^{\prime}<j \leq d_{i}\right\}$. Finally, $G=C \cup K \cup\left(\cup_{i<n} Q_{i}\right) \cup\left(\cup_{i<n} E_{i}^{K Q}\right)$.

We claim that the vertices of the graph $H^{\prime}=\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ can be partitioned into two sets $A, B$ such that (i) $H^{\prime}[A]$ is isomorphic to $H$, (ii) $H^{\prime}[B]$ is an independent set, (iii) $d_{H^{\prime}}(v) \leq 2$ for every vertex $v \in B$. Indeed, $G \backslash K$ contains the vertices $\left\{u_{i, k}, u_{k}: k<m, i \in e_{k}\right\}$ where each $u_{k}$ is an isolated vertex and the rest is the disjoint union of the paths $Q_{i}$. Therefore the component graph $H^{\prime}$ consists of the vertices $A=\left\{Q_{i}: i<n\right\}$ and $B=\left\{u_{k}: k<m\right\}$. For two vertices $v_{i}, v_{j}$ of $H, Q_{i}$ and $Q_{j}$ are connected by the vertex $u_{i, k}^{\prime} \in V(K)$ if and only if $e_{k}=\left\{v_{i}, v_{j}\right\}$ is an edge of $H$. Therefore $H^{\prime}[A]$ is isomorphic to $H$. Moreover, a vertex $u_{k}$ of $G$ is connected to at most two paths $Q_{i}$ via its two neighbors in $C$. Therefore $H^{\prime}[B]$ is an independent set and every vertex of $B$ has degree at most 2 in $H^{\prime}$. We conclude that $H$ is 3 -colorable if and only if $H^{\prime}$ is 3 -colorable. If $(G, C)$ has a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ with $\Delta(T) \leq 3$ then, by Lemma 3.40, $H^{\prime}$ is 3 -colorable. It remains to show that if $H^{\prime}$ is 3 -colorable then $(G, C)$ has such a representation. Given a 3 -coloring of $H^{\prime}$, in the sequel we present such a representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ (see Figure 3.24).

We start with the construction of the tree $T$. $T$ has a vertex $r$ of degree at most 3 that divides it into at most 3 subtrees $T_{1}, T_{2}, T_{3}$, each of which with maximum degree 3. Each $T_{i}$ corresponds to one color of the given 3-coloring of $H^{\prime}$. We describe in detail the subtree $T_{1}$, assuming without loss of generality that the vertices of $H^{\prime}$ colored with color 1 are $Q_{1}, Q_{2}, \ldots, Q_{n^{\prime}}$ and $u_{1}, u_{2}, \ldots, u_{m^{\prime}} . T_{1}$ contains a path $\left(r-e_{1}-\cdots-e_{m^{\prime}}-\right.$ $\left.v_{1}-\cdots-v_{n^{\prime}}\right)$. Each vertex $e_{k}$ starts a path $\left(e_{k}-\ell_{k}\right)$ of length 1. Each vertex $v_{i}$ starts a path $\left(v_{i}-w_{i}-w_{i, k_{1}}-\cdots-w_{i, k_{d_{i}}}\right)$ where $e_{k_{1}}, \ldots, e_{k_{d_{i}}}$ are the edges incident to $v_{i}$ in $G$. Each vertex $w_{i, k}$ starts a path $\left(w_{i, k}-\ell_{i, k}\right)$ of length 1.

We proceed with the construction of the paths $\mathcal{P}$. Every vertex $u_{k}$ of $G$ is represented by a path $P_{k}$ of length 1 starting at vertex $\ell_{k}$. Each vertex $u_{i, k}$ of $G$ is represented by a path $P_{i, k}$ of length 3 starting at $\ell_{i, k}$ and towards $r$. It remains to describe the representation of the vertices of $K$. Every vertex $u^{\prime}$ of $K$ is adjacent to two vertices of $V(C) \backslash K$ in $C$. We represent $u^{\prime}$ by a path between two leaves of $T$ (not all of them shown in the figure). These leaves are exactly the leaves that constitute endpoints of the paths corresponding to the two neighbors of $u^{\prime}$. Specifically:

- A vertex $u_{i, k}^{\prime}$ of $S_{k}$ that is between two vertices $u_{i, k}$ and $u_{j, k}$ of $S_{k}$ is represented by a path $P_{i, k}^{\prime}$ between the two leaves $\ell_{i, k}$ and $\ell_{j, k}$.
- A vertex $u_{j, k}^{\prime}$ of $S_{k}$ that is between two vertices $u_{j, k}$ and $u_{k}$ of $S_{k}$ is represented by a path $P_{j, k}^{\prime}$ between the two leaves $\ell_{j, k}$ and $\ell_{k}$.
- A vertex $u_{k}^{\prime}$ of $S_{k}$ that is between two vertices $u_{k}$ of $S_{k}$ and $u_{i, k+1}$ of $S_{k+1}$ is represented by a path $P_{k}^{\prime}$ between the two leaves $\ell_{k}$ and $\ell_{i, k+1}$.

The vertices $u_{i, k}$ and $u_{j, k}$ are in the connected components $Q_{i}$ and $Q_{j}$ respectively, which in turn are adjacent in $H^{\prime}$ (by the existence of $u_{i, k}^{\prime} \in K$ between them). They are therefore assigned different colors, i.e. the leaves $\ell_{i, k}$ and $\ell_{j, k}$ are in different subtrees of $T$. Therefore $P_{i, k}^{\prime}$ crosses $r$. It can be verified that this holds for the other two cases too. We conclude that the vertices of $K$ are represented by paths that cross $r$. If $H^{\prime}$ is 2-colorable then they constitute an edge-clique, otherwise they constitute a claw-clique. We leave to the reader to verify that $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is a representation of $(G, C)$.


Figure 3.23. A graph $H$, the corresponding pair $(G, C)$ and the component graph $\operatorname{comp}(G, C, K)$ where $K=\left\{u_{i, k}^{\prime}, u_{k}^{\prime}: 0<k<m, i \in e_{k}\right\}$.

Theorem 3.42. HamiltonianPairRec is NP-hard.

Proof. We claim that the decision version of the problem is NP-hard even when $G$ is restricted to the family of VPT graphs. If the instance is a "YES" instance, then $G$ is both a VPT and an EPT graph. In this case, by Theorem 2 of $[6],(G, C)$ has a representation on a tree with maximum degree 3. If the instance is a "NO" instance


Figure 3.24. A representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of a pair $(G, C)$ corresponding to some 3-colorable graph $H$.
then, clearly, $(G, C)$ does not have a representation on a tree with maximum degree 3 . By Lemma 3.41 it is NP-hard to decide whether $(G, C)$ has a representation on a tree with maximum degree 3 .

# 4. GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING PATHS IN A GRID 

### 4.1. Overview

The family of paths on graphs is a commonly studied family of sets. To distinguish the graph on which the paths are defined, from the resulting intersection graph, this graph is called the host graph. Often the host graphs are restricted to certain families such as paths, cycles, trees, grids, etc. When $H$ is restricted to paths and cycles we get the well known families of interval graphs [24] and circular arc graphs [25], respectively. When $H$ is restricted to trees, we obtain the family of Edge Intersection Graph of Paths in a tree (EPT) [22], and when $H$ is a grid, the corresponding graph is called an EPG graph [13].

In the previous chapter we assumed that the host graph was a tree, now we generalize it to any graph. This chapter is based on our recent publication [26]. In Section 4.2 we start with necessary definitions and notations. In Section 4.3 we show in Theorem 4.5 that cobipartite graphs are not included in ENP. This result implies that although the Edge Intersection Graphs of Paths in an arbitrary graph includes all graphs, this is not the case for ENP. By a counting argument, we show that not all cobipartite graphs are ENP. The main observation is that the ENP representations of cliques are the collections of paths whose union is a path or a cycle. Therefore in the representation of a cobipartite graph we consider the intersections, called segments, of two paths (or cycles). The number of possible graphs is a function of the number of segments and the number of endpoints in these segments. An analysis shows that this number is less than the number of possible cobipartite graphs.

In the same section, Theorem 4.6 shows that the class ENP coincides with the family of graphs of Edge-Intersecting and Non-Splitting Paths in a Grid (ENPG). Given an arbitrary representation, we first transform the host graph into a planar
graph. We then replace every vertex of the host graph having degree more than 4 and the paths crossing this vertex with a special gadget, see Figure 4.2. Finally using a known result we embed this planar graph in a grid.

In a grid, a bend of a path is a pair of consecutive edges of the path one of which is vertical and the other is horizontal. Following similar studies for EPG graph class, we study in Section 4.4 the implications of restricting the number of bends of the individual paths in the grid. It is shown in [27] that for every odd integer $k$, $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-EPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{k+1}$-EPG, i.e. the bend numbers imply an infinite hierarchy within the family of EPG graphs. We showed in Theorem 4.13 that there is an infinite sequence of integers $\left\{k_{i}: i=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ such that $\mathrm{B}_{0}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{k_{1}}$ - $\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq$ $\mathrm{B}_{k_{2}}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \cdots$. Later in Chapter 5 we show that $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{2}$-ENPG however the question whether $\mathrm{B}_{2}$ - $\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{3}$ - $\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq \cdots$ is still open.

### 4.2. Definitions and Notations

A walk in a graph $G=(V(G), E(G))$ is a sequence $P=\left(e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{\ell}\right)$ of edges of $E(G)$ such that there are vertices $v_{0}, v_{1}, \ldots, v_{\ell}$ satisfying $e_{i}=\left\{v_{i-1}, v_{i}\right\}$ for every $i \in[\ell]$. Clearly, the reverse sequence $\left(e_{\ell}, \ldots, e_{1}\right)$ is also a walk. The length of $P$ is the number $\ell$ of (not necessarily distinct) edges in the sequence. In this work we do not consider trivial (zero length) walks, as such walks do not intersect others. $P$ is closed whenever $v_{0}=v_{\ell}$, and open otherwise. A trail is a walk consisting of distinct edges. A (simple) path is a walk consisting of distinct vertices except possibly $v_{0}=v_{\ell}$. A contiguous sub-sequence of a walk (resp. trail, path) is termed a sub-walk (resp. sub-trail, sub-path).

Let $P=\left(e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{\ell}\right)$ be a trail with vertices $v_{0}, v_{1}, \ldots, v_{\ell}$ as above. For every $i \in[\ell-1]$, the triple $\left(e_{i}, v_{i}, e_{i+1}\right)$ is an internal point of $P$. Whenever $P$ is closed, the triple $\left(e_{\ell}, v_{\ell}=v_{0}, e_{1}\right)$ too, is an internal point of $P$. We denote the set of internal points of $P$ by $I N T(P)$. We say that a vertex $v$ is an internal vertex of $P$, or equivalently that $P$ crosses $v$ if $v$ is in (i.e. is the second entry of) a triple in $\operatorname{INT}(P)$. If $P$ is open $\operatorname{END}(P) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{v_{0}, v_{\ell}\right\}$ and $\operatorname{TAIL}(P) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{\left(e_{1}, v_{0}\right),\left(e_{\ell}, v_{\ell}\right)\right\}$ are the sets of endpoints
of $P$ and tails of $P$, respectively. Given a set $\mathcal{P}$ of trails, we define $\operatorname{TAIL}(\mathcal{P}) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}$ $\cup_{P \in \mathcal{P}} \operatorname{TAIL}(P), E N D(\mathcal{P}) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \cup_{P \in \mathcal{P}} E N D(P)$ and $I N T(\mathcal{P}) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \cup_{P \in \mathcal{P}} I N T(P)$. For brevity, in the text we often refer to internal points as vertices and to tails as edges. Moreover, when we apply the intersection and union operations on two trails we consider them as sets of internal points and endpoints.

Given two trails $P=\left(e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{\ell}\right)$ and $P^{\prime}=\left(e_{1}^{\prime}, e_{2}^{\prime}, \ldots, e_{\ell^{\prime}}^{\prime}\right)$, a segment of $P \cap P^{\prime}$ is a maximal trail that constitutes a sub-trail of both $P$ and $P^{\prime}$. Since $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ are trails, $P \cap P^{\prime}$ is the union of edge disjoint segments. We denote this set by $\mathcal{S}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$. A tail (resp. endpoint) of a segment is terminating if it is in $\operatorname{TAIL}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$ (resp. $\left.\operatorname{END}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)\right)$. A split of $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ is a pair of internal points $\left(e_{i}, v_{i}, e_{i+1}\right),\left(e_{j}^{\prime}, v_{j}^{\prime}, e_{j+1}^{\prime}\right) \in$ $I N T(P) \times I N T\left(P^{\prime}\right)$ such that $v_{i}=v_{j}^{\prime}$ and $\left|\left\{e_{i}, e_{i+1}\right\} \cap\left\{e_{j}^{\prime}, e_{j+1}^{\prime}\right\}\right|=1$. Note that the common edge and the common vertex constitute a non-terminating tail of a segment of $P \cap P^{\prime}$ and conversely every non-terminating tail of a segment corresponds to a split. We denote by $\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$ the set of all splits of $P$ and $P^{\prime}$, which corresponds to the set of all non-terminating tails of the segments $\mathcal{S}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$.

Lemma 4.1. Let $K$ be a clique of an ENP graph. Then one of the following holds:
(i) $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is an open trail and $\cap P_{K} \neq \emptyset$.
(ii) $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a closed trail, and for every edge e of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ there exists an edge e $e^{\prime}$ of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ such that $P \cap\left\{e, e^{\prime}\right\} \neq \emptyset$ for every path $P \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$.

Proof. Assume that $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains two internal points $\left(e_{1}, v, e_{2}\right)$ and $\left(e_{1}^{\prime}, v, e_{2}^{\prime}\right)$ such that $\left|\left\{e_{1}, e_{2}\right\} \cap\left\{e_{1}^{\prime}, e_{2}^{\prime}\right\}\right|=1$, then there are two paths $P, P^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ such that $\left(e_{1}, v, e_{2}\right) \in$ $\operatorname{INT}(P)$ and $\left(e_{1}^{\prime}, v, e_{2}^{\prime}\right) \in I N T\left(P^{\prime}\right)$. Therefore, $\operatorname{split}\left(P, P^{\prime}\right) \neq \emptyset$ and $P \nsim P^{\prime}$ contradicting the fact that $K$ is a clique. Therefore, $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a disjoint union of trails. However, if $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains two disjoint trails, then $P \| P^{\prime}$ for any two paths $P, P^{\prime}$ from two distinct trails of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$, contradicting the fact that $K$ is a clique. Therefore $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is one trail.
(i) If $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is an open trail, then we can embed it on the real line, so that the individual paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ are intervals on the real line. Then, the result follows
from the Helly property of intervals.
(ii) If $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is an closed trail, let $e$ be any edge of this trail. Let $\mathcal{P}_{e}$ be the set of trails in $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ containing the edge $e$. Then $\cup\left(\mathcal{P}_{K} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{e}\right)$ is an open trail. By the previous result there is an edge $e^{\prime}$ of this trail that is contained of all these paths. Therefore, all the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ contain either $e$ or $e^{\prime}$.

Based on this lemma we say that $K$ is an open (resp. closed) clique if $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is an open (resp. closed) trail. It will be convenient to use the following corollary of Lemma 4.1 in order to unify the two cases into one.

Corollary 4.2. Let $K$ be a clique of an ENP graph, with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Then $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a sub-trail of a closed trail in which for every edge e there exists an edge $e^{\prime}$ such that $P \cap\left\{e, e^{\prime}\right\} \neq \emptyset$ for every $P \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$.

We denote a closed trail whose existence is guaranteed by Corollary 4.2 as $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}$. Note that $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}$ consists of at most one edge more than $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$.

### 4.3. ENP

In this section we show that (i) the family of ENP graphs does not include all co-bipartite graphs (Theorem 4.5), and (ii) the family of ENP graphs coincides with the family of ENPG graphs (Theorem 4.6).

We proceed with definitions regarding the relationship between the representations of two cliques. Given two vertex disjoint cliques $K, K^{\prime}$ of an ENP graph $G$ with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, we denote $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} \mathcal{S}\left(\mathcal{P}^{(K)}, \mathcal{P}^{\left(K^{\prime}\right)}\right)$. A segment $S \in \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ is quiet in $K$ if it does not contain tails of paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$, and busy in $K$, otherwise. The importance of segments stems from the following observation:

Observation 4.3. Consider a pair of trails $\left(P, P^{\prime}\right) \in \mathcal{P}_{K} \times \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$. Then,
(i) $P \cap P^{\prime} \subseteq \cup \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$, and
(ii) split $\left(P, P^{\prime}\right)$ corresponds to the set of all non-terminating segment endpoints crossed by both $P$ and $P^{\prime}$.
$\mathcal{C}_{n, n}$ is the set of all co-bipartite graphs $G\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ where $K=[n]$ and $K^{\prime}=$ $\left\{i^{\prime}: i \in[n]\right\}$. We first prove the following lemma that bounds the number of graphs of this form as a function of the number of segments.

Lemma 4.4. For any $s \geq 0$, the number of graphs $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right) \in \mathcal{C}_{n, n}$ with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ such that $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq s$ is at most $(4 n)!((2 n+2 s)!)^{2}$.

Proof. Let $G \in \mathcal{C}_{n, n} \cap$ ENP, with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. As $K$ and $K^{\prime}$ are cliques, their representations satisfy Corollary 4.2 , i.e. $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ are sub-trails of two closed trails $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}, \mathcal{P}^{\left(K^{\prime}\right)}$. We now consider all the possible orders of $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right) \cup$ $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right) \cup \operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right)$ on $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}$ and $\mathcal{P}^{\left(K^{\prime}\right)}$. This is only an upper bound on the number of possible representations, thus to the number of graphs. This is because some of the orders do not induce a representation of the cliques $K$ and $K^{\prime}$, and some others may imply two intersecting segments.

Let $s=\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|$, and consider the set $\Pi_{K}$ of all the cyclic orders on the closed trail $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}$ of the at most $2 n$ endpoints $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right)$ and the at most $2 s$ endpoints $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right) .\left|\Pi_{K}\right| \leq 2(2 n+2 s-1)!/(2 s)$ !, because the $2 s$ endpoints are identical except for a circular shift by one position (that cause segments to become non-segments and vice versa). For any order $\pi \in \Pi_{K}$ we consider the set $\Pi_{K^{\prime}}(\pi)$ of all the orders, on the closed trail $\mathcal{P}^{\left(K^{\prime}\right)}$, of the at most $2 n$ endpoints $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$ and the at most $2 s$ endpoints $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right)$. This time the segments are umbered according to the order $\pi$ and are therefore considered as distinct. Clearly, $\left|\Pi_{K^{\prime}}(\pi)\right| \leq(2 n+2 s-1)$ !. Summarizing, there are at most $2((2 n+2 s-1)!)^{2} /(2 s)$ ! possible orders, not considering the different orders of vertices of $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right)$ and $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$ within the same segment. We fix an order $\pi^{\prime} \in \Pi_{K^{\prime}}(\pi)$. Let $k(S)$ (resp. $k^{\prime}(S)$ ) be the number of endpoints of $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right)$ (resp. $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$ ) within segment $S$, i.e. $k(S)=\left|\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right) \cap V(S)\right|$ and $k^{\prime}(S)=\left|E N D\left(\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right) \cap V(S)\right|$. The $k(S)+k^{\prime}(S)$ endpoints can be ordered within
$S$ in $\binom{k(S)+k^{\prime}(S)}{k(S)}$ different ways because the order of the vertices within each set is fixed. We have $\prod_{S \in \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)}\binom{k(S)+k^{\prime}(S)}{k(S)}<\prod_{S \in \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)}\left(k(S)+k^{\prime}(S)\right)!<$ $\left(\sum_{S \in \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)}\left(k(S)+k^{\prime}(S)\right)\right)!=(4 n)!$ orders. Therefore, the total number of possible orders of the $4 n+2 s$ endpoints is at most $2(4 n)!((2 n+2 s-1)!)^{2} /(2 s)!<(4 n)!((2 n+$ $2 s)!)^{2}$.

Theorem 4.5. Co-Bipartite $\nsubseteq$ ENP.

Proof. $\left|\mathcal{C}_{n, n}\right|=2^{n^{2}}$ because there are $n^{2}$ pairs of vertices $\left(v, v^{\prime}\right) \in K \times K^{\prime}$, and for every such pair, either $\left(v, v^{\prime}\right) \in E$ or $\left(v, v^{\prime}\right) \notin E$. In the rest of the proof we show that every $G \in \mathcal{C}_{n, n}$ has a representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ for which $s=\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq 12 n$. By Lemma 4.4, the number of such representations and therefore $\left|\mathcal{C}_{n, n} \cap \mathrm{ENP}\right|$ is at most $(4 n)!((2 n+2 s)!)^{2} \leq(4 n)!((2 n+24 n)!)^{2}=(4 n)!(26 n)!(26 n)!$. Therefore, $\log \left|\mathcal{C}_{n, n} \cap \mathrm{ENP}\right|=O(n \log n)$, whereas $\log \left|\mathcal{C}_{n, n}\right|=n^{2}$ concluding the proof. It remains to show that $G$ has a representation with $s \leq 12 n$ segments.

The number of busy segments of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ is at most $4 n$, because $\left|E N D\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right)\right|=2 n$ and an endpoint can be in at most 2 segments. We now bound the number of quiet segments of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$. Consider two endpoints from $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right)$ that are consecutive on $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}$ and let $P$ be the sub-trail of $\mathcal{P}^{(K)}$ between these two endpoints. By this choice, every trail of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ intersecting $P$ includes $P$. Let $\overline{\mathcal{S}}$ be the set of segments $S$ that are sub-trails of $P$ (thus $V(S) \subseteq I N T(P)$ ). Suppose that $|\overline{\mathcal{S}}|>4$. Consider the two edges $e_{a^{\prime}}$ and $e_{b^{\prime}}$ of $\mathcal{P}^{\left(K^{\prime}\right)}$ whose existence are guaranteed by Corollary 4.2. These two edges divide $\mathcal{P}^{\left(K^{\prime}\right)}$ into at most two open trails. One of these open trails contains (at least) 3 segments $S_{1}, S_{2}, S_{3} \in \overline{\mathcal{S}}$ where the indices are in the order they appear on this open trail from $e_{a^{\prime}}$ to $e_{b^{\prime}}$ (see Figure 4.1). Let also $v_{i 1}, v_{i 2}$ be the endpoints of $S_{i}$ in the same order. We claim that the representation obtained by adding to $H$ a new vertex $x$ and two edges $\left\{v_{21}, x\right\},\left\{x, v_{22}\right\}$ and finally modifying all the trails intersecting $P$ (that therefore include $S_{2}$ ) so that the segment $S_{2}$ is replaced by the trail ( $\left\{v_{21}, x\right\},\left\{x, v_{22}\right\}$ ) is an equivalent representation. Clearly, any trail that does not intersect $S_{2}$ is not affected


Figure 4.1. Getting a representation with at most $8 n$ quiet segments in the proof of Theorem 4.5. Whenever there are 3 segments on one side of the closed trail, the middle one can be bypassed.
by this modification. Consider two trails $P_{v}$ and $P_{v^{\prime}}$ such that $\left(v, v^{\prime}\right) \in K \times K^{\prime}$ and both intersect $S_{2}$. $P_{v}$ includes $P$ and therefore includes all the vertices of $S_{2}$, in particular crosses $v_{21}$ and $v_{22}$. On the other hand, by Corollary 4.2, $P_{v^{\prime}}$ contains at least one of $e_{a^{\prime}}$ and $e_{b^{\prime}}$. Without loss of generality let $e_{b^{\prime}} \in P_{v^{\prime}}$. Then, $v_{22}$ is an internal vertex of $P_{v^{\prime}}$. We conclude that $v_{22} \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{v}, P_{v^{\prime}}\right)$, i.e. $\left(v, v^{\prime}\right) \notin E(G)$. After the modification, we have $v_{31} \in \operatorname{split}\left(P_{v}, P_{v^{\prime}}\right)$, thus $\left(v, v^{\prime}\right)$ is not an edge of the resulting graph. Therefore, the new representation is equivalent to $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. After this modification, $S$ is not a segment of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ and the new representation has one segment less. We can apply this transformation until we get an equivalent representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ having at most 4 quiet segments between every two consecutive vertices of $\operatorname{END}\left(\mathcal{P}_{K}\right)$. In other words, $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ has at most $8 n$ quiet segments of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$. Adding the at most $4 n$ busy segments, we conclude that $s \leq 12 n$.

Theorem 4.6. ENP = ENPG

Proof. Clearly, ENPG $\subseteq$ ENP. To prove the other direction, consider an ENP graph $G$ with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. We transform this representation into an equivalent ENPG representation, in three steps. In the first step, we obtain an equivalent representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ where $H^{\prime}$ is planar. In the second step, we transform $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ to
an equivalent representation $\left\langle H^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$ where $H^{\prime \prime}$ is planar and $\Delta\left(H^{\prime \prime}\right) \leq 4$. Finally, we transform $\left\langle H^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$ to an ENPG representation.

The host graph $H$ can be embedded in a plane such that the vertices are mapped to a set of points in general position on the plane and the edges are drawn as straight line segments. Specifically, no three points are co-linear and no three segments intersect at one point. Note that the mapping of the edges might intersect, however as the points are in general position, we can assume that no three edges intersect at the same point. For every intersection point of two edges $e, e^{\prime}$, we can add a vertex $v$ to $H$ and subdivide the edges $e$ and $e^{\prime}$ (and consequently the paths in $\mathcal{P}$ containing $e$ and $e^{\prime}$ ) such that the resulting 4 edges are incident to $v$. Every pair of paths $P, P^{\prime}$ that include $e$ and $e^{\prime}$ respectively now intersect at $v$. However as we are not concerned with vertex intersections, the resulting representation is a representation of $G$. We continue in this way until all intersection points are replaced by a vertex. The graph $H^{\prime}$ of the resulting representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ is clearly planar.

We now transform the representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ to a representation $\left\langle H^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle$ where $H^{\prime \prime}$ is planar with maximum degree at most 4 . We start with $\left\langle H^{\prime \prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}\right\rangle=\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$, and as long as there is a vertex $v$ with $d_{H^{\prime \prime}}(v)>4$, we eliminate such a vertex without introducing new vertices of degree more than 4 using the following procedure described in Figure 4.2: we number the edges incident to $v$ as $e_{1}, e_{2}, \ldots, e_{d_{v}}$ in counterclockwise order according to the planar embedding of $H^{\prime}$. Then $e_{1}$ and $e_{d_{v}}$ are in the same face $F$ of $H^{\prime \prime}$. We replace the vertex $v$ with a path of $d_{v}$ vertices $v_{1}, v_{2}, \ldots, v_{d_{v}}$ such that each edges $e_{i}$ is incident to $v_{i}$. Clearly, the constructed path is part of $F$. We now construct the gadget in Figure 4.2 within the face $F$, where every path crossing $v$ from an edge $e_{i}$ to another edge $e_{j}$ with $i<j$ is modified as described in the figure. Clearly, we do not lose intersections in this process. On the other hand, every pair of paths that intersect within the gadget have at least one edge incident to $v$ in common before the transformation. Moreover, two paths have a split vertex within the gadget if and only if they split at $v$ before the transformation.

The last step is implied by the following theorem.


Figure 4.2. The gadget used in the second transformation in the proof of Theorem 4.6.

Theorem 2.3 [28]: A planar graph $H^{\prime \prime}$ with maximum degree at most 4 can be embedded in a grid graph $H^{\prime \prime \prime}$ of polynomial size: the vertices $u^{\prime \prime}$ of $H^{\prime \prime}$ are mapped to vertices $u^{\prime \prime \prime}$ of $H^{\prime \prime \prime}$; each edge $e^{\prime \prime}=\left\{u^{\prime \prime}, v^{\prime \prime}\right\}$ of $H^{\prime \prime}$ is mapped to a path $e^{\prime \prime \prime}$ between $u^{\prime \prime \prime}$ and $v^{\prime \prime \prime}$ in $H^{\prime \prime \prime}$; the intermediate vertices of $e^{\prime \prime \prime}$ belong to exactly one such path. Given an embedding of $H^{\prime \prime}$ guaranteed by the theorem, we embed every trail $P^{\prime \prime} \in \mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}$ to a trail $P^{\prime \prime \prime}$ of $H^{\prime \prime \prime}$ by embedding every edge $e^{\prime \prime}$ of it to the corresponding path $e^{\prime \prime \prime}$ of $H^{\prime \prime \prime} . P^{\prime \prime \prime}$ is clearly a walk. $P^{\prime \prime \prime}$ a trail, because otherwise there is an edge of $H^{\prime \prime \prime}$ that is contained in the embedding of two distinct edges of $H^{\prime \prime}$, contradicting the last guarantee of the theorem. Clearly two trails $P_{1}^{\prime \prime}, P_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ of $\mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime}$ intersect if and only if the corresponding paths $P_{1}^{\prime \prime \prime}, P_{2}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ in $\mathcal{P}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ intersect. Moreover a split $\left(e_{11}^{\prime \prime}, v^{\prime \prime}, e_{12}^{\prime \prime}\right),\left(e_{21}^{\prime \prime}, v^{\prime \prime}, e_{22}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ of two paths $P_{1}^{\prime \prime}, P_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ is mapped to a split $\left(e_{11}^{\prime \prime \prime}, v^{\prime \prime \prime}, e_{12}^{\prime \prime \prime}\right),\left(e_{21}^{\prime \prime}, v^{\prime \prime \prime}, e_{22}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ of the corresponding paths $P_{1}^{\prime \prime \prime}, P_{2}^{\prime \prime \prime}$ and this mapping is one to one.

## 4.4. $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG

An ENPG graph is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG if it has an ENPG representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$, in which every path $P \in \mathcal{P}$ has at most $k$ bends. By definition, $\mathrm{B}_{k^{\prime}}$-ENPG $\subseteq \mathrm{B}_{k^{\prime}}$-ENPG whenever $k \leq k^{\prime}$. However, the question whether $\mathrm{B}_{k^{\prime}}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{k^{\prime}}$ - ENPG holds is not trivial and is the subject of this section. We show in Theorem 4.13 that for some infinite and increasing sequence of numbers $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots$ there is a graph in $\mathrm{B}_{k_{i+1}}$-ENPG that is not $\mathrm{B}_{k_{i}}$ - -NPG, thus proving the existence of an infinite hierarchy within the family of ENPG graphs.


Figure 4.3. A $\mathrm{B}_{(6 x+1)}$-ENPG representation of the graph $\mathrm{PM}_{\left(6 x^{2}+5 x-3\right)}$ for $x=3$. The solid and dotted lines represent the union of the paths corresponding to two cliques. The individual paths are intentionally omitted but described in detail in Figure 4.4.

The graph $\mathrm{Pm}_{n} \in \mathcal{C}_{n, n}$ is the co-bipartite graph $\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ with $|K|=\left|K^{\prime}\right|=n$ and $E$ constitutes a perfect matching. We denote by $\hat{n}_{k}$ the biggest number $n$ such $\mathrm{Pm}_{n} \in \mathrm{~B}_{k}$-ENPG. In Corollary 4.8 and Lemma 4.12 we present lower and upper bounds for $\hat{n}_{k}$, respectively. Using these bounds we show in Theorem 4.13 that $\hat{n}_{k_{1}}<$ $\hat{n}_{k_{2}}<\ldots$ for some infinite increasing sequence of integers $k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots$. We start with the lower bound.

Lemma 4.7. $\mathrm{PM}_{\left(6 x^{2}+5 x-3\right)} \in \mathrm{B}_{(6 x+1)}$-ENPG for every integer $x>1$.

Proof. Given an integer $x>1$ we construct a $\mathrm{B}_{(6 x+1)}$-ENPG representation of $\mathrm{PM}_{\left(6 x^{2}+5 x-3\right)}$. Figure 4.3 depicts the structure of the open clique representations $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$. The segments $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ are numbered from 0 to $2 x$ in increasing distance from the edge $e$. The non-segments of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (maximal paths of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K} \backslash \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) are numbered in the same manner, and the non-segments of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ (maximal paths of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}} \backslash \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ ) are numbered in decreasing order of their distance from $e^{\prime}$.

Let $\alpha_{i}=\min (3 x+1-i, 2 x)$ and $\alpha_{i}^{\prime}=\max (0, x+2-i)$ for $i \in[0,2 x] . \alpha_{i}$ (resp. $\left.\alpha_{i}^{\prime}\right)$ is chosen as the most distant non-segment reachable by a path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) starting at segment $i$ and having at most $6 x+1$ bends. We observe that $\alpha_{i}, \alpha_{i}^{\prime} \in[0,2 x]$ for every $i$. Indeed, (i) $3 x+1-i \geq x+1>1$ implying that $\alpha_{i}$ is positive, (ii) $\alpha_{i}^{\prime}$ is non-negative by definition, (iii) $\alpha_{i}$ is at most $2 x$ by definition, and (iv) if $\alpha_{i}^{\prime}>0$ we have $\alpha_{i}^{\prime}=x+2-i \leq x+2 \leq 2 x$. Furthermore, we observe that $\alpha_{i}^{\prime} \leq \alpha_{i}$ for every $i \in[0,2 x]$. Indeed $\alpha_{i}^{\prime}>\alpha_{i}$ would imply $x+2-i>3 x+1-i$ which is equivalent to $2 x<1$, a contradiction. We conclude that $0 \leq \alpha_{i}^{\prime} \leq \alpha_{i} \leq 2 x$.


Figure 4.4. The paths terminating at segment $i$.

Given the above facts, we proceed with our construction. A segment numbered $i$ contains $\alpha_{i}-\alpha_{i}^{\prime}+1$ internal vertices numbered from 0 in decreasing order of their distance from $e$. Every non-segment consists of one horizontal and one vertical edge as shown in Figure 4.3. For every $i \in[0,2 x]$ and every $j \in\left[0, \alpha_{i}-\alpha_{i}^{\prime}\right]$ our construction contains four paths, two of which start at segment $i$ on the left (as shown in Figure 4.4) and two of which start at segment $i$ on the right.

- The path $P_{i, j} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\bar{P}_{i, j} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ ) starts at vertex $j$ of segment $i$ on the left (resp. right) side of $e$ and ends at the unique intermediate vertex (the bend) of the non-segment $\alpha_{i}-j$ of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ on the right (resp. left) side of $e$.
- The path $P_{i, j}^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ (resp. $\bar{P}_{i, j}^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) starts at vertex $j+1$ of segment $i$ on the left (resp. right) side of $e^{\prime}$ and ends at the unique intermediate vertex of the non-segment $\alpha_{i}-j$ of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ on the right (resp. left) side of $e^{\prime}$.

We note that all the paths $P_{i, j}$ and $\bar{P}_{i, j}$ cross the edge $e$ and therefore correctly represent the clique $K$. Similarly, the paths $P_{i, j}^{\prime}$ and $\bar{P}_{i, j}^{\prime}$ represent the clique $K^{\prime}$.

We now show that every path contains at most $6 x+1$ bends. For this purpose we first observe that the number of bends between

- segment $i$ and the edge $e$ is $2 i$,
- segment $i$ and the edge $e^{\prime}$ is $4 x-2(i-1)$,
- non-segment $\bar{i}$ and the edge $e$ is $\max (2 \bar{i}-1,0)$,
- non-segment $\bar{i}$ and the edge $e^{\prime}$ is $4 x-2 \bar{i}+3$.

Since the path $P_{i, j}$ starts from segment $i$ and ends at non-segment $\alpha_{i}-j$, its number of bends is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 2 i+\max \left(2\left(\alpha_{i}-j\right)-1,0\right) \leq 2 i+\max \left(2 \alpha_{i}-1,0\right) \\
\leq & 2 i+\max (6 x+1-2 i, 0)=\max (6 x+1,2 i) \\
\leq & \max (6 x+1,4 x)=6 x+1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Similarly, the number of bends of $P_{i, j}^{\prime}$ is

$$
\begin{aligned}
& 4 x-2(i-1)+\left(4 x-2\left(\alpha_{i}-j\right)+3\right) \\
= & 8 x+5-2 i-2\left(\alpha_{i}-j\right) \leq 8 x+5-2 i-2 \alpha_{i}^{\prime} \\
= & 8 x+5-2 i-2 \max (0, x+2-i) \leq 8 x+5-2 i-2(x+2-i) \\
= & 6 x+1 .
\end{aligned}
$$

Since the paths $\bar{P}_{i, j}$ and $\bar{P}_{i, j}^{\prime}$ are symmetric to $P_{i, j}$ and $P_{i, j}^{\prime}$ respectively we conclude that our construction is a $\mathrm{B}_{(6 x+1)}$-ENPG representation of the cobipartite graph $\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$. It remains to show that this graph is $\mathrm{PM}_{\left(6 x^{2}+5 x-3\right)}$.

The number of vertices of $K$ is the number of paths $P_{i, j}$ and $\bar{P}_{i, j}$ which is equal to twice the number of paths $P_{i, j}$. Therefore

$$
|K|=2 \sum_{i=0}^{2 x}\left(\alpha_{i}-\alpha_{i}^{\prime}+1\right)=2 \sum_{i=0}^{2 x} \alpha_{i}-2 \sum_{i=0}^{2 x} \alpha_{i}^{\prime}+4 x .
$$

This is also the number of vertices of $K^{\prime}$. Moreover we have

$$
\sum_{i=0}^{2 x} \alpha_{i}=\sum_{i=0}^{x} 2 x+\sum_{i=x+1}^{2 x}(3 x+1-i)=\frac{7}{2} x^{2}+\frac{5}{2} x
$$

and

$$
\sum_{i=0}^{2 x} \alpha_{i}^{\prime}=\sum_{i=0}^{x+2}(x+2-i)=\frac{(x+2)(x+3)}{2}
$$

By combining the above equations we conclude

$$
|K|=6 x^{2}+5 x-3
$$

We now conclude the proof by showing that the edges $E$ constitute a perfect matching of $K$ and $K^{\prime}$. We will show that given two paths $P \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $P^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ we have $P \sim P^{\prime}$ if and only if $P=P_{i, j}$ and $P^{\prime}=P_{i, j}$ for some $i, j$ or $P=\bar{P}_{i, j}$ and $P^{\prime}=\bar{P}_{i, j}^{\prime}$ for some $i, j$. Since the case for paths $\bar{P}_{i, j}$ is symmetric, we will consider only paths $P_{i, j}$ and $P_{i, j}^{\prime}$. We observe that every path crosses at least one segment boundary. Therefore, $P \sim P^{\prime}$ if and only if (i) $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ intersect in a segment that contains an endpoint from both $P$ and $P^{\prime}$, and (ii) $P$ and $P^{\prime}$ do not cross a common segment endpoint. Then for two paths $P_{i, j}$ and $P_{i^{\prime}, j^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ we have $P_{i, j} \sim P_{i^{\prime}, j^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ only if $i=i^{\prime}$ and they intersect at segment $i$. By our construction, this can happen only if $j^{\prime} \geq j$ in which case $P_{i, j} \cap P_{i, j^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ is the path between vertices $j$ and $j^{\prime}+1$ of segment $i$. We now recall that $P_{i, j}$ and $P_{i, j^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ end at non-segments $\alpha_{i}-j$ of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\alpha_{i}-j^{\prime}$ of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$, respectively. Then, whenever $j^{\prime}>j P_{i, j}$ and $P_{i, j^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ cross a common segment endpoint. Therefore, $P_{i, j} \sim P_{i^{\prime}, j^{\prime}}^{\prime}$ only if $i=i^{\prime}$ and $j=j^{\prime}$. By the same observations, $P_{i, j} \sim P_{i, j}^{\prime}$ for every $i \in[0,2 x]$ and $j \in\left[0, \alpha_{i}-\alpha_{i}^{\prime}\right]$.

Corollary 4.8. $\hat{n}_{6 x+1} \geq 6 x^{2}+5 x-3$ for every positive integer $x$.

We now provide an upper bound on $\hat{n}_{k}$. We first show an upper bound on the number of bends in a $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG representation of a clique (Lemma 4.9). Then we show that this bound implies an upper bound on the number of segments in the representation (Lemma 4.11), and finally using this result we bound $\hat{n}_{k}$ from above (Lemma 4.12).

Lemma 4.9. Let $K$ be a complete graph with $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ where every path contains at least $m$ bends. Then $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains at most $2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor$ bends, where $\delta_{K}$ is 1 whenever $K$ is a closed clique and 0 otherwise.

Proof. If $K$ is an open clique ( $\delta_{K}=0$ ), then there exists an edge $e$ contained in every $P \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$. $e$ divides $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ into two trails each of which contains at most $k$ bends. Therefore, $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains at most $2 k=2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor$ bends. If $K$ is a closed clique $\left(\delta_{K}=1\right)$, consider a trail $P=\left(e_{1}, \ldots, e_{\ell}\right)$ of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ with $m$ bends. Let $P_{1}$ (resp. $P_{\ell}$ ) be a trail containing $e_{1}$ (resp. $e_{\ell}$ ) with the maximum number of edges from $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K} \backslash P$. We have $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}=P \cup P_{1} \cup P_{\ell}$, because otherwise there is an edge $e \in \cup \mathcal{P}_{K} \backslash\left(P \cup P_{1} \cup P_{\ell}\right)$ that is included in some trail $P^{\prime}$ that contains neither $e_{1}$ nor $e_{\ell}$ and $P^{\prime}$ is not contained in $P$. Then $P^{\prime}$ does not intersect $P$, contradicting the fact that $K$ is a clique. Since $P$ has $m$ bends and $P_{1}, P_{\ell}$ have at most $k$ bends each, the number of bends of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is at most $2 k+m$. Moreover, this number is even because $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a closed trail. Therefore, the number of bends of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is at most $2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m}{2}\right\rfloor=2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor$.

Corollary 4.10. A clique $K$ of a $B_{1}$-ENPG graph is an open clique and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ has at most 2 bends.

Lemma 4.11. Let $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right) \in \mathcal{C}_{n, n}$ with a $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ where the minimum number of bends of a path $P \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $P^{\prime} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) is $m$ (resp. $m^{\prime}$ ). Then

$$
\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right| \leq 2 k+\frac{\max (m, 2)+\max \left(m^{\prime}, 2\right)}{2}
$$

Proof. Let $\delta \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} 2-\delta_{K}-\delta_{K^{\prime}} \in[0,2]$ be the number of open cliques among $K, K^{\prime}$, and $s \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|$. If $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}=\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ then $s=1$, satisfying the claim. Otherwise, there
are exactly $2 s$ segment endpoints at most $2 \delta$ of which can be terminating. At every non-terminating segment endpoint there is at least one bend of one of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}, \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$. Therefore, the total number of bends of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ is at least $2 s-2 \delta$. By Lemma $4.9, \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$ contains at most $2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m^{\prime} \cdot \delta_{K^{\prime}}}{2}\right\rfloor\right)$ bends. Therefore,

$$
\begin{aligned}
2 s-2 \delta & \leq 2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor+2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m^{\prime} \cdot \delta_{K^{\prime}}}{2}\right\rfloor \\
s-\delta & \leq\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor+\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m^{\prime} \cdot \delta_{K^{\prime}}}{2}\right\rfloor \leq 2 k+\frac{m \cdot \delta_{K}+m^{\prime} \cdot \delta_{K^{\prime}}}{2} \\
s & \leq 2 k+\frac{m \cdot \delta_{K}+m^{\prime} \cdot \delta_{K^{\prime}}}{2}+2-\delta_{K}-\delta_{K^{\prime}} \\
& \leq 2 k+\frac{\max (m, 2)+\max \left(m^{\prime}, 2\right)}{2}
\end{aligned}
$$

where the last step can be easily verified by substituting the three possible values of the pair $\delta_{K}, \delta_{K^{\prime}}$.

## Lemma 4.12.

$$
\hat{n}_{k} \leq 8 k^{2}+8 k+4
$$

Proof. Let $\mathrm{Pm}_{n}=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ with a $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Let $\mathcal{S}=$ $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$, and $m$ (resp. $m^{\prime}$ ) the smallest number of bends of a path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\left.\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$.

For an edge $e=\left\{v, v^{\prime}\right\} \in E$ we say that $e$ is realized in segment $S \in \mathcal{S}$ if $P_{v} \cap P_{v^{\prime}} \cap S \neq \emptyset$. Every edge $\left\{v, v^{\prime}\right\}$ is realized in at least one segment, because otherwise $P_{v} \cap P_{v^{\prime}}=\emptyset$, contradicting the fact that $\left\{v, v^{\prime}\right\} \in E$. For a segment $S$ let $E_{S}$ be the set of edges realized in segment $S$. Then $E=\cup_{S \in \mathcal{S}} E_{S}$. In the following, we first provide an upper bound on $\left|E_{S}\right|$, and using Lemma 4.11 which bounds the number of segments we derive a bound on $|E|$.

Let without loss of generality $E_{S}=\left\{\left\{v_{1}, v_{1}^{\prime}\right\},\left\{v_{2}, v_{2}^{\prime}\right\}, \ldots\right\}$. Let $\mathcal{P}_{S}=\left\{P_{v_{1}}, P_{v_{2}}, \ldots\right\}$


Figure 4.5. The structure of the path $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{S}^{\prime}$ in the proof of Lemma 4.12.
and $\mathcal{P}_{S}^{\prime}=\left\{P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}, P_{v_{2}^{\prime}}, \ldots\right\}$. We first assume that every path $\mathcal{P}_{S} \cup \mathcal{P}_{S}^{\prime}$ crosses at least one endpoint of $S$, an assumption that will be relaxed at the end of the proof. Then, every such path crosses exactly one endpoint of $S$, since if a path, say $P_{v_{i}}$, crosses both endpoints of $S, P_{v_{i}}$ splits from every other path of $\mathcal{P}_{S} \cup \mathcal{P}_{S}^{\prime}$ contradicting $P_{v_{i}} \sim P_{v_{i}^{\prime}}$. Let without loss of generality $P_{v_{1}}, \ldots, P_{v_{\ell}}$ be the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ that cross a given endpoint, say $a$, of $S$. Then, $P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}, \ldots, P_{v_{\ell}^{\prime}}$ are paths that cross the other endpoint, say $b$, of $S$, since $P_{v_{i}}$ and $P_{v_{i}}^{\prime}$ cannot cross the same endpoint.

Consult Figure 4.5 for the rest of the discussion. Let $c_{i}$ (resp. $c_{i}^{\prime}$ ) be the endpoint of $P_{v_{i}}$ (resp. $P_{v_{i}^{\prime}}$ ) in $S$. Let also $a_{i}$ (resp. $b_{i}$ ) be the endpoint of $P_{v_{i}}$ (resp. $P_{v_{i}^{\prime}}$ ) that is not in $S$. Assume without loss of generality that the vertices $a_{i}$ are ordered in decreasing distance from $a$ (on $P_{i}$ ). Since $P_{v_{1}}$ and $P v_{1}^{\prime}$ have an intersection in $S, c_{1}^{\prime}$ is between $c_{1}$ and $a$. We claim that $c_{2}$ is between $c_{1}^{\prime}$ and $a$. Indeed, otherwise $P_{v_{2}} \cap P_{v_{1}^{\prime}} \neq \emptyset$, and since $\left\{v_{2}, v_{1}^{\prime}\right\} \notin E_{S}$, it must be the case that $P_{v_{2}} \nsim P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}$, i.e. $P_{v_{2}}$ and $P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}$ cross a common segment endpoint. Then $P_{v_{1}}$ crosses this endpoint too, implying that $P_{v_{1}} \nsim P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}$, a contradiction.

For the same reason as above, $c_{2}^{\prime}$ is between $c_{2}$ and $a$. Then $P_{v_{2}^{\prime}} \cap P_{v_{1}} \neq \emptyset$. Therefore, there is a segment endpoint $s_{2}$ common to $P_{v_{2}^{\prime}}$ and $P_{v_{1}}$. Clearly, $s_{2}$ is not in $\operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{2}}\right)$, since in such a case $P_{v_{2}} \nsim P_{v_{2}^{\prime}}$, implying that $\left\{v_{2}, v_{2}^{\prime}\right\} \notin E$. We conclude that $s_{2} \in \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{1}}\right) \cap \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{2}^{\prime}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{2}}\right)$. Continuing in this way, we get segment endpoints $s_{3} \in \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{2}}\right) \cap \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{3}^{\prime}}\right) \backslash I N T\left(P_{v_{3}}\right), \ldots s_{\ell} \in \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{\ell-1}}\right) \cap \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{\ell}^{\prime}}\right) \backslash \operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{\ell}}\right)$. From
this relations it follows that all these endpoints are distinct elements of $\operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{1}}\right) \backslash$ $\operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{\ell}}\right)$. By symmetry, we conclude that $I N T\left(P_{v_{\ell}^{\prime}}\right) \backslash I N T\left(P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}\right)$ contains at least $\ell-1$ segment endpoints.

We are now ready to upper bound $\left|E_{S}\right|$ depending the lower and upper bounds $m, m^{\prime}$ and $k$ on the number of bends of a path. $\left|E_{S}\right|$ will be shown to be decreasing in $m$ and $m^{\prime}$. However, the number of segments are increasing with $m$ and $m^{\prime}$. In the sequel we analyze this tradeoff. $P_{v_{1}}$ has at most $k$ bends and $P_{v_{\ell}}$ contains at least $m$ bends. Therefore, $\operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{1}}\right) \backslash I N T\left(P_{v_{\ell}}\right)$ contains at most $k-m$ bends. Similarly, $\operatorname{INT}\left(P_{v_{\ell}^{\prime}}\right) \backslash I N T\left(P_{v_{1}^{\prime}}\right)$ contains at most $k-m^{\prime}$ bends. Every segment endpoint is a bend of at least one of the involved paths. Therefore,

$$
\ell-1 \leq k-m+k-m^{\prime} .
$$

Considering also the $\ell^{\prime}$ paths of $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ that cross $b$ and the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{S}^{\prime}$ that cross $a$, we conclude that

$$
\left|E_{S}\right|=\ell+\ell^{\prime} \leq 4 k+4-2\left(m+m^{\prime}\right)
$$

By Lemma 4.11, $|\mathcal{S}| \leq \min \left(2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor, 2\left\lfloor\frac{2 k+m^{\prime} \cdot \delta_{K}}{2}\right\rfloor\right) \leq 2 k+m+m^{\prime}$. Therefore,

$$
|E| \leq \sum_{S \in \mathcal{S}}\left|E_{S}\right| \leq(2 k+M)(4 k+4-2 M)
$$

where $M$ is $m+m^{\prime}$.

Finally we relax our assumption that every path crosses at least one segment boundary. There is at most one path $P \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ that does not cross segment boundaries, for two such paths do not intersect, thus cannot be in the representation of a clique.

We conclude that

$$
|E| \leq(2 k+M)(4 k+4-2 M)+2 \leq(2 k+1)(4 k+2)+2=8 k^{2}+8 k+4
$$

where the second inequality holds because the maximum of the left hand side is attained at $M=1$.

We are now ready to prove the main result of this section.

Theorem 4.13. There is an infinite increasing sequence of integers $\left\{k_{i}: i=1,2, \ldots\right\}$ such that

$$
\mathrm{B}_{0}-\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq \mathrm{~B}_{1}-\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq \mathrm{~B}_{k_{1}}-\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq \mathrm{~B}_{k_{2}}-\mathrm{ENPG} \subsetneq \cdots
$$

where $\lim _{i \rightarrow \infty} \frac{k_{i+1}}{k_{i}}=\sqrt{48}$.

Proof. We first note that $C_{4}$ is not in the family of interval graphs which coincides with the family of $\mathrm{B}_{0}$-ENPG graphs. On the other hand a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of $C_{4}$ ie easily obtained by surrounding a $2 \times 2$ square with four L-shaped paths.

We now provide an infinite sequence $k_{0}=1, k_{1}, k_{2}, \ldots$ such that $\hat{n}_{k_{i}}<\hat{n}_{k_{i+1}}$ for every $i>0$, implying $\mathrm{B}_{k_{i}}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{k_{i+1}}$-ENPG. By Lemma 4.12 we have $\hat{n}_{k_{i}}<8 k_{i}^{2}+8 k_{i}+5$ for any $k_{i} \geq 1$. Let $x_{i}$ be the smallest integer such that $8 k_{i}^{2}+8 k_{i}+5 \leq$ $6 x_{i}^{2}+5 x_{i}-3$. Note that the left hand side is at least 21 , and therefore $x_{i}>1$. Let $k_{i+1}=6 x_{i}+1$. By Corollary 4.8, $\hat{n}_{k_{i+1}} \geq 6 x_{i}^{2}+5 x_{i}-3$. Therefore, $\hat{n}_{k_{i+1}}>\hat{n}_{k_{i}}$.

We now show that $k_{i+1} / k_{i}$ converges to $\sqrt{48}$ :

$$
6\left(x_{i}-1\right)^{2}+5\left(x_{i}-1\right)-3<8 k_{i}^{2}+O\left(k_{i}\right)
$$

by the way $x_{i}$ is chosen. Therefore, $x_{i}=\frac{2}{\sqrt{3}} k_{i}+o\left(k_{i}\right)$, and finally $k_{i+1}=6 x_{i}+1=$ $\sqrt{48} k_{i}+o\left(k_{i}\right)$.

We conclude this section by possible improvements of the above result. In the construction of Lemma 4.7 we use open cliques. One can use closed cliques that, by Lemma 4.9, lead to more segments than open cliques, consequently increasing the lower bound. Another observation is that the non-segments of the construction contain bends that are clearly not segment endpoints. Recalling the proof of Lemma 4.11, we conclude that this example is not tight. One can modify the construction such that almost every bend is an endpoint of a segment, implying a further improvement of the lower bound. On the other hand, the upper bound can be improved by considering the minimum number, say $m_{S}$, of bends of a path in the set $\mathcal{P}_{S}$, instead of the global minimum $m$ that we consider in the proof of Lemmata 4.11 and 4.12. These improvements will certainly decrease the ratio of $\sqrt{48}$ at the expense of overly complicating the analysis, with the asymptotic behaviour of the sequence $k_{i}$ remaining exponential.

# 5. GRAPHS OF EDGE-INTERSECTING NON-SPLITTING ONE BEND PATHS IN A GRID 

### 5.1. Overview

In this chapter, we consider graphs of Edge-Intersecting and Non-Splitting One Bend Paths in a Grid ( $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG). In the previous chapter we showed that ENP $=$ ENPG. Whenever the host graph is a grid, it is common to use the following notion: a bend of a path on a grid is an internal point in which the path changes direction. An ENPG graph is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG if it has a representation in which every path has at most $k$ bends. In the same chapter, it was shown that ENPG contains an infinite hierarchy of subclasses that are obtained by restricting the number of bends in the paths. Motivated by this result, in this chapter we focus on one bend ENPG graphs.

In Section 5.2 we start with some basic results. We show that cycles and trees are $B_{1}$-ENPG by providing a representation construction for an arbitrary input.

In Section 5.3 we consider a special case of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG graphs: $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\cap$ split graphs. We first give a characterization of these graphs in Theorem 5.2: a split graph $G=S(K, S, E)$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG if and only if $S$ can be partitioned into two sets $S_{L}, S_{R}$ such that the $K-S_{L}$ and $K-S_{R}$ incidence matrices have the consecutive ones property for its columns. By using this result, it is possible to design efficient algorithms for problems known to be NP-complete in split graphs. For example maximum cut and domination problems are NP-hard in split graphs. The complexity of these problems in $B_{1}$-ENPG split graphs is open. We then show in Theorem 5.8 that the $B_{1}$-ENPG recognition problem is NP-complete even for a very restricted subfamily of split graphs. The hardness comes mainly from the difficulty of deciding the position of each path (left or right of the common edge of paths representing the clique). This result however do not necessarily imply the NP-completness of $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG recognition problem. The complexity of this problem is open. Another research direction is to investigate $(G, S)$
pair recognition where $G$ is an arbitrary graph and $S \subseteq G$ is a split graph. Introducing red edges can possibly make the problem polynomial time solvable.

In Section 5.4, we consider another special case of $B_{1}$-ENPG graphs: $B_{1}$-ENPG $\cap$ cobipartite graphs. We show that there are two types of representations and provide a characterization for each type in Lemmata 5.17 and 5.18. Theorem 5.19 combines these two results. This theorem implies a naive polynomial time $O\left(n^{4}\right)$ recognition algorithm. In the sequel we provide a linear time recognition algorithm. The forbidden subgraph characterization of this graph class is open. It would be also interesting to consider $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG cobipartite graphs.

The maximum cut problem is the problem of partitioning the vertices of a graph such that the number of edges incident to both sets are maximum. This problem remains NP-complete even in co-bipartite graphs and in split graphs. By Theorem 5.19 we know that if a cobipartite graph is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG then either there are two connected cobipartite chain graphs or there are at most 4 vertices whose removal leave a co-bipartite chain graph. In [29] we show that maximum cut problem in co-bipartite chain graphs can be solved in polynomial time by using a dynamic programming algorithm. With some adjustments, the same algorithm can be used to solve maximum cut problem in $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graphs. On the other hand, Theorem 5.3 characterizes similarly $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graphs, a natural next step is to consider maximum cut problem in this graph class.

### 5.2. Prelimineries

We first observe that some well-known graph classes are included in $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG.
Proposition 5.1. (i) Every cycle is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG.
(ii) Every tree is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$ - ENPG.

Proof. (i) For $k=3$ three identical paths consisting of one edge constitutes a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of $C_{3}$. For $k=4$ Figure 5.1a depicts a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG


Figure 5.1. (a) $\mathrm{A}_{1}$-EPG representation of $C_{4}$, (b) a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-EPG representation of $C_{11}$. representation of $C_{4}$. Finally for any $k>4$, we can construct a $C_{k}$ as shown in Figure 5.1 b for the case $k=11$.
(ii) Given a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG graph $G$, we denote by $R_{U}$ the bounding rectangle of $\mathcal{P}_{U}$ for $U \subseteq V(G)$. Let $T$ be a tree with a root $r$. We prove the following claim by induction on the structure of $T$ (see Figure 5.2). $T$ has a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ in which the corners of $R_{T}$ can be renamed as $a_{T}, b_{T}, c_{T}, d_{T}$ in counterclockwise order such that i) every path of $\mathcal{P}$ has exactly one bend, ii) $b_{T}$ is a bend of $P_{r}$, iii) $a_{T}$ is an endpoint of $P_{r}$, iv) $a_{T}$ is used exclusively by $P_{r}$.

If $T$ is an isolated vertex, any path with one bend is a representation of $T$. Moreover, it is easy to verify that it satisfies conditions i) through iv).
Otherwise let $T_{1}, \ldots, T_{k}$ be the subtrees of $T$ obtained by the removal of $r$, with roots $r_{1}, \ldots, r_{k}$ respectively. By the inductive hypothesis every such subtree $T_{i}$ has a representation with bounding box $a_{T_{i}}, b_{T_{i}}, c_{T_{i}}, d_{T_{i}}$ satisfying conditions i) through iv). We now build a representation of $T$ satisfying the same conditions. We shift and rotate the representations of $T_{1}, \ldots, T_{k}$ so that the bounding rectangles do not intersect and the vertices $a_{T_{1}}, b_{T_{1}}, a_{T_{2}}, b_{T_{2}}, \ldots, a_{T_{k}}, b_{T_{k}}$ are on the same horizontal line and in this order. We extend the paths $P_{r_{2}}, \ldots, P_{r_{k}}$ representing the roots of the trees $T_{2}, \ldots, T_{k}$ such that the endpoint $a_{T_{i}}$ of $P_{r_{i}}$ is moved to $a_{T_{1}}$. Since $a_{T_{i}}$ is used exclusively by $P_{r_{i}}$ this modification does not cause $P_{r_{i}}$ to split from a path of $\mathcal{P}_{V\left(T_{i}\right)}$. Therefore, the individual trees $T_{1}, \ldots, T_{K}$ are properly represented. Clearly, if two paths from different subtrees $T_{i}, T_{j}(i<j)$ intersect, then one of the intersecting paths must be $P_{r_{j}}$. $P_{r_{j}}$ intersects the bounding rectangle of $T_{i}$ only at the path between $a_{i}$ and $b_{i}$. As every path of $\mathcal{P}_{V\left(T_{i}\right)}$, in particular one intersecting $P_{r_{j}}$ has one bend, such a path splits from $P_{r_{j}}$. Therefore, for any pair of vertices $\left(v_{i}, v_{j}\right) \in T_{i} \times T_{j}$ we have that $v_{i}$ and $v_{j}$ are


Figure 5.2. A construction for $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of trees.
non-adjacent in $\operatorname{ENPG}(\mathcal{P})$, as required.
We rename the corners of the bounding rectangle $R_{T}$ such that $b_{T}=a_{T_{1}}$. We now add the path $P_{r}$ from $b_{T_{1}}$ to $a_{T}$ with a bend at $b_{T}$. The conditions i), ii), iii) are satisfied. We extend $P_{r}$ by one edge at $a_{T}$ to make sure that $a_{T}$ is exclusively used by $P_{r}$, thus satisfying condition iv). $P_{r}$ intersects only $R_{T_{1}}$. This intersection is the path between $b_{T_{1}}$ and $d_{T_{1}}$ bending at $a_{T_{1}}$. Every path that intersects $P_{r}$ and does not split from it must bend at $a_{T_{1}}$. As $a_{T_{1}}$ is used exclusively by $P_{r_{1}}, P_{r_{1}}$ is the only path that possibly satisfies $P_{r_{1}} \sim P_{r}$. We now observe that $P_{r_{i}} \sim P_{r}$ for every $i \in[k]$. Therefore $r$ is adjacent to the root of $T_{j}$ in $\operatorname{ENPG}(\mathcal{P})$, as required.

### 5.3. Split Graphs

In this section we present a characterization theorem (Theorem 5.3) for $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graphs in Section 5.3.1. Then, Section 5.3.2 proceeds with some properties of these graphs implied by this theorem. An interesting implication of one of these properties is that the family of $B_{1}$-ENPG is properly included in the family of $B_{2}$-ENPG graphs. Finally, using Theorem 5.3, we prove in Section 5.3.3 that the recognition problem of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG graphs is NP-complete even in a very restricted subfamily of split graphs.

### 5.3.1. Characterization of $B_{1}$-ENPG Split Graphs

We recall that a binary matrix has the consecutive ones property (for columns) if there is a permutation of its rows such that in every column all the one entries are consecutive.

The following lemma shows that if $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG then $G$ has a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ with $H$ being a tree.

Lemma 5.2. $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\cap \mathrm{SPLIT} \subseteq$ ENPT $\cap$ SPLIT.

Proof. Let $G=S(K, S, E)$ be a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. We want to show that there is a representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ of $G$ such that $\cup \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$ is a tree, i.e. $\cup \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$ does not contain any cycle.

By Corollary 4.10, we know that $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a path with at most two bends in every representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ of $G$. Suppose that there exists a vertex $s \in S$ such that $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(P_{s}, \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}\right)\right|>1$. Then $P_{s} \cup \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains a cycle, therefore at least 4 bends. But $P_{s}$ has at most one bend and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ has at most two bends, a contradiction. Therefore, $\mathcal{S}\left(P_{s}, \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}\right)$ consists of one segment for every vertex $s \in S$.

If $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ has two bends, (without loss of generality the subpath between the bends is vertical) then we subdivide the top and bottom edges of this vertical subpath, so that the vertical distance between any two horizontal edges in different subpaths of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is at least three. Consider the path $P_{s}$ for some $s \in S$. By the discussion in the previous paragraph, $P_{s}$ intersects $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ in one segment. Consider the (at most two) subpaths (that we term tails in this discussion) of $P_{s} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{K}$. Every such tail can be shortened to one edge without affecting the relationship of $P_{s}$ with the paths $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ as $P_{s}$ intersects with $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ in one segment. Moreover, for every $s^{\prime} \in S$, (i) $s$ is not adjacent to $s^{\prime}$, and (ii) after the shortening of the tails of $P_{s}$ and $P_{s^{\prime}}$, the two paths are non intersecting. Let $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ be the resulting representation. Then $H^{\prime}$ consists of a path $\mathcal{P}_{K}^{\prime}$ with at most 2 bends where the horizontal edges are at distance at least 3 to each other. Moreover,
$\cup \mathcal{P}^{\prime} \backslash \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}^{\prime}$ consists of edges each of which intersects $\mathcal{P}_{K}^{\prime}$ in one vertex. We conclude that $\cup \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$ is a tree. Therefore, $S(K, S, E)$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPT.

In the rest of this section we assume without loss of generality that $K$ is maximal, i.e. that no vertex of $S$ is adjacent to all vertices of $K$. We also assume that $G$ does not contain isolated vertices and twins.

Theorem 5.3. A split graph $G=S(K, S, E)$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG if and only if $S$ can be partitioned into two sets $S_{L}, S_{R}$ such that the $K-S_{L}$ and $K-S_{R}$ incidence matrices have the consecutive ones property. Moreover, if $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG it has a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ such that
(i) $P_{u}$ has no bends whenever $u \in K$, and
(ii) whenever $v \in S$ (i) $P_{v}$ has one bend, (ii) $e_{K} \notin P_{v}$, and (iii) $P_{v} \cap \cup \mathcal{P}_{K} \neq \emptyset$.

Proof. $(\Rightarrow)$ Assume that $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG. By Lemma 5.2, $G$ has a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ with $H$ being a tree. We assume without loss of generality that $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a straight line between two vertices $q_{L} \in T_{L}, q_{R} \in T_{R}$. Because otherwise we can transform $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ into a straight line, by first replacing $e_{K}$ by a sufficiently long path and then rotating the entire subtree hanging from a bend point by 90 degrees. The edge $e_{K}$ divides the tree into two subtrees $T_{L}$ and $T_{R}$ and the path $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ into two paths $P_{L}$ and $P_{R}$. We subdivide the edge $e_{K}$ into three edges $e_{L}, e_{K}, e_{R}$ such that $e_{L} \in T_{L}$ (resp. $e_{R} \in T_{R}$ ). Consequently, every path $P \in \mathcal{P}$ that contains one of these three edges contains all of them. Suppose that a path $P_{v}$ representing a vertex $v \in S$ contains $e_{K}$. If $P_{v}$ does not have a bend then $v$ is adjacent to all the vertices of $K$, contradicting the fact that $K$ is maximal. Therefore, $P_{v}$ has one bend. Assume without loss of generality that the bend of $P_{v}$ is in $T_{R}$. Then we can remove all the edges $P_{v} \cap\left(T_{L} \cup\left\{e_{K}\right\}\right)$ from $P_{v}$ to get an equivalent representation in which $P_{v}$ does not contain $e_{K}$. Therefore, there is a representation of $G$ in which every path of $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ is contained in one of $T_{L}, T_{R}$.

For $X \in\{L, R\}$, let $S_{X} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left\{v \in S: P_{v} \subseteq T_{X}\right\}$. By the preceding discussion $\left\{S_{L}, S_{R}\right\}$ is a partition of $S$. Consider a vertex $v \in S_{X}$, i.e. $P_{v} \subseteq T_{X}$. If $P_{v}$ does not


Figure 5.3. The representation of a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph.
have a bend then it does not split from any path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$. Therefore, we can get an equivalent representation in which $P_{v}$ has one bend by first moving the endpoint of $P_{v}$ that is farther from $e_{K}$ to $q_{X}$, and then adding an edge to $P_{v}$ at $q_{X}$ so that $q_{X}$ becomes a bend of $P_{v}$. Let $P_{v}^{\prime} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} P_{v} \cap \cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ for every $v \in S$. If the bend of $P_{v}$ is the endpoint of $P_{v}^{\prime}$ closer to $e_{K}$ then $P_{v}$ splits from every path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ that it intersects. In this case $v$ is isolated, contradicting our assumption. We conclude that the bend of $P_{v}$ is the endpoint of $P_{v}^{\prime}$ that is farther from $e_{K}$. Figure 5.3 depicts the subtree $T_{R}$ of such a representation.

As every path $P_{u} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains $e_{K}$, it has one endpoint in $P_{L}$ and one endpoint in $P_{R}$. For $X \in\{L, R\}$ the order of the endpoints of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ on $P_{X}$ induces a permutation $\sigma_{X}$ on $K$. Consider the $K-S_{X}$ incidence matrix, so that the rows representing vertices $u \in K$ are ordered in accordance to the permutation $\sigma_{X}$. Consider a vertex $v \in S_{X}$ and its corresponding path $P_{v} \subseteq T_{X}$. Let $u \in K$ be a neighbor of $v$ in $G$. We observe that the endpoint of $P_{u}$ in $T_{X}$ is in $P_{v}^{\prime}$. Then the endpoints of all the paths representing neighbors of $v$ are in $P_{v}^{\prime}$, i.e. they are consecutive in the permutation $\sigma_{X}$. In other words all the ones in column $v$ of the $K-S_{X}$ incidence matrix are consecutive.
$(\Leftarrow)$ Assume that $S$ is partitioned into two sets $S_{L}$ and $S_{R}$ such that for $X \in$ $\{L, R\}$ the $K-S_{X}$ incidence matrix has the consecutive ones property, and let $\sigma_{X}$ be a permutation of $K$ that makes the ones of every column of the corresponding matrix consecutive. We now construct a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of $G$. For a vertex $u \in K$, $P_{u}$ is the path between the vertices $\left(-2 \sigma_{L}(u), 0\right)$ and $\left(2 \sigma_{R}(u), 0\right)$. For $v \in S_{X}$, let $u_{1}(v), u_{2}(v)$ be the indices of the first and last ones of column $v$ of the $K-S_{X}$ incidence matrix. If $v \in S_{R}$ then $P_{v}$ is a one bend path from $\left(2 u_{1}(v)-1,0\right)$ to $\left(2 u_{2}(v)+1,1\right)$ with a bend at $\left(2 u_{2}(v)+1,0\right)$, otherwise $P_{v}$ is a one bend path from $\left(-2 u_{1}(v)+1,0\right)$
to $\left(-2 u_{2}(v)-1,1\right)$ with a bend at $\left(-2 u_{2}(v)-1,0\right)$. We first note that $K$ is a clique because $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ is a horizontal path and every path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ contains the edge $(0,0),(1,0)$. Second, we note that $S$ is an independent set because all the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{S}$ are $L$ shaped with the same orientation. Moreover, their bend points are distinct. Therefore any two intersecting such pats split at one of these bend points. We now observe that for any $v \in S_{X}$ and $u \in K, P_{u} \sim P_{v}$ if and only if $\sigma_{X}(u) \in\left[u_{1}(v), u_{2}(v)\right]$. By the way $u$ an $v$ are chosen, the last statement holds if and only if the corresponding entry in the $K-S_{L}$ incidence matrix is one, i.e. $u$ and $v$ are adjacent in $G$. Therefore, the constructed paths constitute a representation of $G$.

### 5.3.2. Two Consequences of The Characterization of $B_{1}$-ENPG Split Graphs

The next two results (Lemma 5.4 and Theorem 5.5) are implied by the above characterization of Theorem 5.3.

Lemma 5.4. (i) If $S(K, S, E)$ is a twin-free $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph then

$$
\sqrt{|K|} \leq|S|<|K|^{2} .
$$

(ii) All split graphs $S(K, S, E)$ with $|K| \leq 4$ are $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG.
(iii) There is a split graph $S(K, S, E)$ with $|K|=5$ that is not $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG.

Proof. (i) Let $\left\{S_{L}, S_{R}\right\}$ be a partition of $S$ and $\sigma_{L}, \sigma_{R}$ be the permutations of $K$ satisfying the conditions of Theorem 5.3. We order the rows of the $K-S_{L}$ and $K-S_{R}$ incidence matrices by these permutations so that the one entries of every column are consecutive. For $X \in\{L, R\}$, every column of $K-S_{X}$ has one row containing its first 1 and at most one row containing its first zero after its last 1 entry. Consider the (at most) $2\left|S_{X}\right|$ rows defined in this way. We observe that any other row of the $K-S_{X}$ incidence matrix is identical to one of these rows. To see this observation, let $i$ be a row from the $2\left|S_{X}\right|$ rows and $j>i$ the first row different from $i$. If there is a column that contains a 1 in the $i$-th row and a 0
in the $j$-th row, then $j$ contains the first 1 of this column. Similarly, if a column contains a 0 in the $i$-th row and a 1 in the $j$-th row, then row $j$ contains the first 0 after the 1-s of this column. Now suppose that $|K|>4\left|S_{L}\right| \cdot\left|S_{R}\right|$. Then there are at least two vertices of $K$ whose corresponding rows in both of $K-S_{L}$ and $K-S_{R}$ matrices are identical, contradicting our assumption that $G$ is twin-free. Therefore $|K| \leq 4\left|S_{L}\right| \cdot\left|S_{R}\right| \leq|S|^{2}$.

Let $S_{d}$ be the set vertices of $S$ having degree $d$, and let $v \in S_{d} \cap S_{L}$. Then, when the rows of the $K-S_{L}$ incidence matrix are ordered by the permutation $\sigma_{L}$, the column $v$ contains exactly $d$ consecutive ones. There are $|K|+1-d$ possible such columns. As the graph is twin-free, we have $\left|S_{d} \cap S_{L}\right| \leq|K|+1-d$ implying

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left|S_{d}\right| \leq 2(|K|+1-d) \tag{5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

We conclude

$$
\begin{aligned}
|S| & =\left|S_{1}\right|+\sum_{d=2}^{|K|-1}\left|S_{d}\right|+\left|S_{|K|}\right| \leq|K|+\sum_{d=2}^{|K|-1} 2(|K|+1-d)+1 \\
& =|K|+(|K|-2)(|K|+1)+1=|K|^{2}-1
\end{aligned}
$$

(ii) It is sufficient to show for $K=[4]$ and $S=2^{K}$ where every vertex of $S$ is adjacent to a different subset of vertices of $K$. Every two permutations $\sigma_{L}, \sigma_{S}$ satisfy the consecutiveness condition for subsets of size 0,1 and 4 . Let $\sigma_{L}$ be the identity permutation and $\sigma_{R}=(3142)$. It is easy to verify that they satisfy the consecutiveness conditions of all the sets.
(iii) Consider a split graph $G=(K, S, E)$ with $K=[5]$ and $|S|=9<\binom{5}{2}$ where every vertex of $S$ is adjacent to a distinct pair of $K$. We have $\left|S_{2}\right|=|S|=9$. Therefore, $G$ is not $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG as otherwise it would constitute a contradiction to (5.1).


Figure 5.4. The $\mathrm{B}_{2}$-ENPG representation of a non- $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split graph described in the proof of Theorem 5.5.

Theorem 5.5. $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\subsetneq \mathrm{B}_{2}$-ENPG.

Proof. Consider the split graph $G=(K, S, E)$ where $K=[5], S=\{a, b, c, d, e, f, g, h, i\}$ and $N(a)=\{1,2\}, N(b)=\{2,3\}, N(c)=\{3,4\}, N(d)=\{4,5\}, N(e)=\{2,5\}$, $N(f)=\{2,4\}, N(g)=\{1,4\}, N(h)=\{1,3\}, N(i)=\{3,5\}$. We have shown in the proof of Lemma 5.4 that $G \notin \mathrm{~B}_{1}$-ENPG. Figure 5.4 depicts a $\mathrm{B}_{2}$-ENPG representation of $G$.

### 5.3.3. NP-completeness of $B_{1}$-ENPG split graph recognition

We now proceed with the NP-completeness of $B_{1}$-ENPG recognition. We first present a preliminary result that can be useful per se. Clearly, if the edge set of a graph $G$ can be partitioned into two Hamiltonian cycles, then $G$ is 4-regular. However, in the opposite direction we have the following:

Theorem 5.6. The problem of determining whether the edge set of a 4-regular graph can be partitioned into two Hamiltonian cycles is NP-complete.

Proof. The Hamiltonian cycle problem is NP-complete even for 3-regular graphs [30]. The theorem now follows from the fact that a 3 -regular graph is Hamiltonian if and
only if the edge set of its (4-regular) line graph can be partitioned into two Hamiltonian cycles [31].

A graph is almost d-regular if it can be obtained by removing a vertex from a $d$-regular graph. Clearly, a graph is almost $d$-regular if and only if all its vertices have degree $d$, except for $d$ vertices with degree $d-1$. If the edge set of a graph can be partitioned into two hamiltonian paths, then it is almost 4-regular. On the other hand the edge set of an almost 4-regular graph can be partitioned into two hamiltonian paths if and only if the edge set of the corresponding 4-regular graph can be partitioned into two hamiltonian cycles. Therefore,

Corollary 5.7. The problem of determining whether the edge set of an almost 4-regular graph can be partitioned into two Hamiltonian paths is NP-complete.

Before stating the main result of this section we remark that a column of a binary matrix containing at most one 1 entry has consecutive ones under every permutation of the rows of the matrix. Therefore, a split graph is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG if and only if the graph obtained from it by the removal of all isolated vertices and degree 1 vertices is $B_{1}$-ENPG. However,

Theorem 5.8. The $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG recognition problem is NP-complete even for split graphs $(K, S, E)$ where $d(v)=2$ for every $v \in S$.

Proof. The proof is by reduction from the problem of decomposing an almost 4-regular graph into two Hamiltonian paths. Given an almost 4-regular graph $G$, we construct the split graph $(K, S, E)$ where $K=V(G), S=E(G)$ and the edges of the split graph $E=\{\{e, u\},\{e, v\}: \forall e=\{u, v\} \in E(G)\}$. It remains to show that $(K, S, E)$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG if and only if $E(G)$ can be partitioned into two Hamiltonian paths.

Assume that $E(G)$ can be partitioned into two Hamiltonian paths $H_{L}$ and $H_{R}$. This induces a partition of $S$ into $S_{L}=E\left(H_{L}\right)$ and $S_{R}=E\left(H_{R}\right)$. Moreover, for $X \in\{L, R\}$ the order of the vertices of $G$ in $H_{X}$ induces a permutation $\sigma_{X}$ of the
vertices of $K=V(G)$. Let $X \in\{L, R\}$ and $e=\{u, v\} \in H_{X}$. Then $u$ and $v$ are consecutive in the permutation $\sigma_{X}$. However, $u$ and $v$ are the only indices that contain a one in the column of $e$. Therefore, the $K-S_{L}$ incidence matrix with rows ordered according to $\sigma_{X}$ has consecutive ones in every column. Therefore, by Theorem 5.3, $(K, S, E)$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG.

Now assume that $(K, S, E)$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG. Then, by Theorem $5.3, S$ can be partitioned into two sets $S_{L}$ and $S_{R}$ and there are two permutations $\sigma_{L}, \sigma_{R}$ of $K$ such that for $X \in\{L, R\}$ the $K-S_{X}$ incidence matrix has consecutive ones in every column when its rows are ordered according to $\sigma_{X}$. The partition $\left\{S_{L}, S_{R}\right\}$ induces a partition $\left\{E_{L}, E_{R}\right\}$ of $E(G)$. The permutations $\sigma_{L}, \sigma_{R}$ correspond to Hamiltonian paths $H_{L}, H_{R}$ of $K$ (a priori, not necessarily a Hamiltonian path of $G$ ). Let $e=\{u, v\} \in S_{X}=E_{X}$. Then $u$ and $v$ are consecutive in $\sigma_{X}$, thus adjacent in the Hamiltonian path $H_{X}$. Therefore, $e \in E\left(H_{X}\right)$. We conclude

$$
\begin{aligned}
E_{L} & \subseteq E\left(H_{L}\right) \\
E_{R} & \subseteq E\left(H_{R}\right) \\
E(G) & =E_{L} \cup E_{R} \subseteq E\left(H_{L}\right) \cup E\left(H_{R}\right) \\
|E(G)| & \leq\left|E\left(H_{L}\right)\right|+\left|E\left(H_{R}\right)\right|-\left|E\left(H_{L}\right) \cap E\left(H_{R}\right)\right|
\end{aligned}
$$

Let $n=|V(G)|$. As $G$ is almost 4-regular, $|E(G)|=(4(n-4)+3 \cdot 4) / 2=2 n-2$. Moreover, $\left|E\left(H_{R}\right)\right|=\left|E\left(H_{L}\right)\right|=n-1$ as $H_{L}$ and $H_{R}$ are Hamiltonian paths of $K$. Substituting in the above inequality, we get

$$
2 n-2 \leq 2(n-1)-\left|E\left(H_{L}\right) \cap E\left(H_{R}\right)\right|
$$

implying that (i) $E\left(H_{L}\right) \cap E\left(H_{R}\right)=\emptyset$ and that (ii) all inclusions above can be replaced by equalities. By (i) $H_{L}$ and $H_{R}$ are disjoint Hamiltonian paths of $K$, and by (ii) all their edges are edges of $G$, i.e. they are Hamiltonian paths of $G$.

A double interval graph is the intersection graph of a set of pairs of intervals in the real line. It is known that every 2-split graph is a double interval graph [32].

Corollary 5.9. The $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG recognition problem is NP-complete even when restricted to double interval graphs.

### 5.4. Cobipartite Graphs

In Section 5.4.1, we characterize $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graphs. We show that there are two types of representations for $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graphs. For each type of representation, we characterize their corresponding graphs. These characterizations lead to a polynomial-time recognition algorithm. However we show in Section 5.4.2 that there is also a linear-time recognition algorithm.

By the following two observations, in the sequel we focus on connected twin-free graphs.

Observation 5.10. Let $G$ be a graph and $G^{\prime}$ obtained from $G$ by removing a twin vertex until no twins remain. Then, $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG if and only if $G^{\prime}$ is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG.

Observation 5.11. A graph $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG if and only if every connected component of $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-ENPG.

### 5.4.1. Characterization of $B_{1}$-ENPG Co-bipartite Graphs

We proceed with definitions and two related lemmas (Lemma 5.14, Lemma 5.15) that will be used in each of the above mentioned characterizations.

Let $S$ be a path of a graph $H$ with endpoints $u, v$. Two path sets $\mathcal{P}_{u}, \mathcal{P}_{v}$ meet at $S$ if (i) every path of $\mathcal{P}_{x}$ contains $x$ where $x \in\{u, v\}$, (ii) has an endpoint among the internal vertices of $S$, and (iii) a pair of paths $P_{u} \in \mathcal{P}_{u}, P_{v} \in \mathcal{P}_{v}$ may intersect only in $S$ (see Figure 5.5).


Figure 5.5. Two path sets $\mathcal{P}_{u}, \mathcal{P}_{v}$ meet at a path $S$ with endpoints $u$ and $v$.

A graph $G=(V, E)$ is a difference graph (equivalently bipartite chain graph) if every $v_{i} \in V$ can be assigned a real number $a_{i}$ and there exists a positive real number $T$ such that (i) $\left|a_{i}\right|<T$ for all $i$ and (ii) $\left\{v_{i}, v_{j}\right\} \in E$ if and only if $\left|a_{i}-a_{j}\right| \geq T$. Every difference graph is bipartite where the bipartition is according to the sign of $a_{i}$.

Theorem 5.12. [33] If $G=(V, E)$ be a bipartite with bipartition $V=X \cup Y$. Then the following statements are equivalent:
(i) $G$ is a difference graph with bipartition $V=(X \cup Y)$.
(ii) Let $\delta_{1}<\delta_{2}<\ldots \delta_{s}$ be distinct nonzero degrees in $X$, and set $\delta_{0}=0$. Let $\sigma_{1}<\sigma_{2}<\ldots \sigma_{t}$ be distinct nonzero degrees in $Y$, and set $\sigma_{0}=0$. Let $X=$ $X_{0} \cup X_{1} \cup \ldots X_{s}, Y=Y_{0} \cup Y_{1} \cup \ldots \cup Y_{t}$, where $X_{i}=\left\{x \in X \mid d(x)=\delta_{i}\right\}, Y_{j}=$ $\left\{y \in Y \mid d(y)=\delta_{j}\right\}$. Then $s=t$ and for $x \in X_{i}, y \in Y_{j},\{x, y\} \in E$ if and only if $i+j>t$.

Theorem 5.13. [33] A graph is a difference graph if and only if it is bipartite and $2 K_{2}$-free.

Lemma 5.14. Given a difference graph $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ and a path $S$ of length at least $t+2$ there is a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation in which $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ meet at $S$ where $t$ is the number of distinct nonzero degrees of $K$ in $G$.

Proof. Let $\delta_{1}<\delta_{2}<\ldots \delta_{s}$ (resp. $\sigma_{1}<\sigma_{2}<\ldots \sigma_{t}$ ) be the distinct nonzero degrees in $K$ (resp in $K^{\prime}$ ). By Theorem 5.12 we have $s=t$. Assume that the given path $S$ has a length $t+2$. We construct the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) between the vertex $(0,-1)$ and $(0, i)$ (resp. between the vertex $(0, t-j)$ and $(0, t+1))$ for $x \in K$ (resp. $\left.x^{\prime} \in K^{\prime}\right)$ such that $d(x)=\delta_{i}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\left(d\left(x^{\prime}\right)=\sigma_{j}\right)\right)$. With this construction $\mathcal{P}_{K}, \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ meet at $S$ between $(0,-1)$ and $(0, t+1)$. By Theorem 5.12 two paths $P_{x} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}, P_{x^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ intersect if and
only if $i+j>t$. Now assume desired length of $S$ is bigger than $t+2$ then we subdivide the edges of $S$ without changing the relations of paths in $\mathcal{P}$.

Lemma 5.15. If two sets $\mathcal{P}_{K}, \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ of one-bend paths meet at a path $S$ then $G_{B}$ is a difference graph.

Proof. Let $u, v$ be the endpoints of $S$. Let $T=|E(S)|+1$ and $r_{i}$ (resp. $l_{j}$ ) be the endpoint of the path $P_{i} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\quad P_{j} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) among the internal vertices of $S$. Let $a_{i}=\left|E\left(p_{S}\left(u, r_{i}\right)\right)\right|\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.a_{j}=-\left|E\left(p_{S}\left(l_{j}, v\right)\right)\right|\right)$ where $p_{T}(x, y)$ is the unique path between vertices $x$ and $y$ of a tree $T$. By definition, $\left|a_{i}\right| \leq|E(S)|<T$ for every $i \in K \cup K^{\prime}$. Two paths $P_{i} \in \mathcal{P}_{K}, P_{j} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ have an edge in common if and only if $\left|a_{i}-a_{j}\right| \geq|E(S)|+1=T$. Therefore, $G_{B}$ is a difference graph.

Two representations $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ and $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ are bend-equivalent if they are representations of the same graph $G$ and there is a one to one correspondence between $\mathcal{P}$ and $\mathcal{P}^{\prime}$ such that the corresponding paths have the same number of bends. We proceed with the following lemma that classifies all the $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representations of a co-bipartite graph into two types.

Lemma 5.16. Let $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ be a connected $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graph with a representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$. Then
(i) $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right| \in\{1,2\}$, and
(ii) whenever $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=1$ there is a bend-equivalent representation $\left\langle H^{\prime}, \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right\rangle$ such that $\cup \mathcal{P}^{\prime}$ is a tree $T^{\prime}$ with $\Delta\left(T^{\prime}\right) \leq 3$ with at most two vertices of degree 3.
(iii) whenever $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=2$ the paths $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ intersect as depicted in Figure 5.6 b .

Proof. By Corollary 4.10, $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ are two paths with at most 2 bends each. Let $e_{K}$ (resp. $e_{K^{\prime}}$ ) be an arbitrary edge of $\cap \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\cap \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ). $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ intersect in at least one edge, because otherwise $G$ is not connected. Therefore, $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right| \geq 1$. We consider two disjoint cases:

- $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=1$. In this case it is sufficient to prove ii). Let $T=\cup \mathcal{P}$ and $S$ be the unique segment of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$. Any vertex of degree at least 3 in $T$ is an endpoint of $S$, therefore there are at most 2 such vertices. On the other hand an endpoint of $S$ has degree at most 3 . Therefore $\Delta(T) \leq 3$ and there are at most 2 vertices of degree 3 in $T$.

If $T$ does not contain a cycle then $T$ is a tree and the claim holds. Assume $\cup \mathcal{P}$ contains a cycle $C$. We will modify the paths and end up with a representation where $C$ does not exist and we will make sure that we keep the bends of the paths. If $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K} \subseteq \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ then $C \subseteq \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ implying that $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ contains 4 bends, a contradiction. Therefore there exist two edges $e_{1} \in \mathcal{P}_{K} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ and $e_{2} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}} \backslash$ $\mathcal{P}_{K}$. We can also assume that $e_{1}$ and $e_{2}$ are consecutive, since otherwise either $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)>1$ or $C \subseteq S$ but $S$ may contain at most 2 bends.
We subdivide $e_{1}$ and $e_{2}$ into $e_{1}^{\prime}, e_{1}^{\prime \prime}$ and $e_{2}^{\prime}, e_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ respectively. Assume $e_{1}^{\prime}\left(\operatorname{resp} e_{2}^{\prime}\right)$ is closer to $S$ in $C$ than $e_{1}^{\prime \prime}$ (resp. $e_{2}^{\prime \prime}$ ). We remove all the edges of $P_{K}$ (resp. $P_{K^{\prime}}$ ) starting from $e_{1}^{\prime \prime}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.e_{2}^{\prime \prime}\right)$ to the tail of $P_{K}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.P_{K^{\prime}}\right)$ which is closer to $e_{1}$ (resp. $e_{2}$ ) to $S$. After this operation we do not lose any edge-intersection between any pair of paths since they do not belong to $S$. We also do not lose any splitting since any pair of splitting at $e_{1}$ or $e_{2}$ are now splitting at $e_{1}^{\prime}$ or $e_{2}^{\prime}$. Let $v$ be the common vertex of the consecutive edges $e_{1}, e_{2}, v$ is not a bend since otherwise $\cup \mathcal{P}$ would have more than 4 bends. Therefore this new representation is bend equivalent to $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$.

- $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right| \geq 2$. We claim that $\cup \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\left(=\cup \mathcal{P}_{K} \cap \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$ contains only horizontal edges, or only vertical edges. Indeed, assume that there is a vertical edge $e_{V}$ and a horizontal edge $e_{H}$ in $\cup \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$. We observe that there is a unique one bend path connecting $e_{V}$ and $e_{H}$, and that any other connecting these edges contains at least three bends. Therefore, both $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ contain this path. We conclude that $e_{V}$ and $e_{H}$ are in the same segment. As any other edge is either horizontal or vertical, we can proceed similarly for all the edges of $\cup \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ and prove that they all belong to the same segment, contradicting the fact that we have at least 2 segments. Assume without loss of generality that all the edges of $\cup \mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ are vertical. Then every segment is a vertical path. No two segments


Figure 5.6. Two types of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of connected co-bipartite graphs: (a) Type I: $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=1, \cup \mathcal{P}$ is isomorphic to a tree $T$ with $\Delta(T) \leq 3$ and at most two vertices $u, v$ having degree 3, (b) Type II: $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=2, \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) has exactly two bend points $u, v$ (resp. $u^{\prime}, v^{\prime}$ ).
can be on the same vertical line, because this will require at least one of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$, $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ to contain four bends. Moreover, three vertical segments in distinct vertical lines imply that $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ contain at least four bends each. Therefore, there are exactly 2 vertical segments and $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ (also $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) has exactly two bends.
Let $u, v$ (resp. $\left.u^{\prime}, v^{\prime}\right)$ be the bends of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\left.\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$. Then $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)=$ $\left\{S_{u}, S_{v}\right\}$ where $S_{u}$ (resp. $S_{v}$ ) is on the same vertical line as $u$ and $u^{\prime}$ (resp. $v$ and $v^{\prime}$ ). Moreover $e_{K}$ (resp. $e_{K^{\prime}}$ ) is between $u$ and $v$ (resp. $u^{\prime}$ and $v^{\prime}$ ) since otherwise we would have paths crossing both $u$ and $v$ (resp. $u^{\prime}$ and $v^{\prime}$ ) and thus 2 bends. Now consider the situation where $u$ and $u^{\prime}$ are on the same side of $S_{u}$ on their common vertical line. Every path intersecting with $S_{u}$ cross the same endpoint of $S_{u}$, implying that if a pair of paths from distinct cliques intersect at $S_{u}$, they split at this endpoint. As the same holds for the paths intersecting in $S_{v}$, we conclude that $G$ is not connected, contradiction to our assumption. Therefore, $u$ and $u^{\prime}$ (resp. $v$ and $v^{\prime}$ ) are on different sides of $S_{u}$ (resp. $S_{v}$ ), as depicted in Figure 5.6b.

Based on Lemma 5.16, a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of a connected co-bipartite graph $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ is Type $I($ resp. Type $I I)$ if $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)=1\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)=2\right)$.

We proceed with the characterization of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG graphs having a Type II
representation that turns out to be simpler than the characterization of the others.
Lemma 5.17. A connected twin-free co-bipartite graph $G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ has a Type II $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation if and only if the bipartite graph $G_{B}=B\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ contains at most two non-trivial connected components each of which is a difference graph.

Proof. $(\Rightarrow)$ Let $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a Type II $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of $G$ and $u, v$ (resp. $\left.u^{\prime}, v^{\prime}\right)$ be the bends of $\cup \mathcal{P}\left(\right.$ resp. $\left.\cup \mathcal{P}^{\prime}\right)$ as depicted in Figure 5.6b. For $x \in\{u, v\}$, let $S_{x}$ be the segment contained in the path between $x$ and $x^{\prime}$. The paths of $\mathcal{P}$ not intersecting with any of $S_{u}, S_{v}$ correspond to trivial connected components of $G_{B}$. There is at most one such path in $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ (resp. $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ ) as $G$ is twin-free.

Each one of the remaining paths intersects exactly one of $S_{u}, S_{v}$, as otherwise such a path would contain two bends. For $X \in\left\{K, K^{\prime}\right\}$ and $x \in\{u, v\}$ let $\mathcal{P}_{X_{x}}$ be the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{X}$ intersecting $S_{x}$. Then $\mathcal{P}_{K_{x}}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{K_{x}^{\prime}}$ meet at $S_{x}$. By Lemma 5.15, $G_{B}\left[K_{x} \cup K_{x}^{\prime}\right]$ is a difference graph.
$(\Leftarrow)$ We construct a Type II representation for the maximal case, i.e. $G_{B}$ contains exactly two trivial connected components and two non-trivial connected components. Let $w \in K$ and $w^{\prime} \in K^{\prime}$ be the two trivial connected components of $G_{B}$ and $B\left(K_{u}, K_{u}^{\prime}, E_{u}\right), B\left(K_{v}, K_{v}^{\prime}, E_{v}\right)$ be the two non-trivial connected components of $G_{B}$. We construct a rectangle as depicted in Figure 5.6 b having vertical lines with $\max \left(\min \left(\left|K_{u}\right|,\left|K_{u}^{\prime}\right|\right), \min \left(\left|K_{v}\right|,\left|K_{v}^{\prime}\right|\right)\right)+2$ edges, and horizontal lines with one edge $e_{K}=\{u, v\}$ and $e_{K^{\prime}}=\left\{u^{\prime}, v^{\prime}\right\}$. For $X \in\left\{K, K^{\prime}\right\}$, and $x \in\{u, v\}$ the paths $\mathcal{P}_{X_{x}}$ start with $e_{X}$ and enter segment $S_{x}$. The other endpoints of the paths will be in the segment $S_{x}$. Then, for $x \in\{u, v\}, \mathcal{P}_{K_{x}}$ and $\mathcal{P}_{K_{x}^{\prime}}$ meet at $S_{x}$. Since $B\left(K_{x}, K_{x}^{\prime}, E_{x}\right)$ is a difference graph, by Lemma 5.14, the endpoints can be determined such that $\mathcal{P}_{K_{x}} \cup \mathcal{P}_{K_{x}^{\prime}}$ is a representation of $B\left(K_{x}, K_{x}^{\prime}, E_{x}\right) . P_{w}$ (resp. $P_{w^{\prime}}$ ) consists of the edge $e_{K}$ (resp. $e_{K^{\prime}}$ ). It is easy to verify that this is a representation of $G$.

We proceed with the characterization of the $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG graphs with a Type I characterization. For this purpose we resort to the following definitions from [34].

Let $G=B\left(V, V^{\prime}, E\right)$ be a bipartite graph and $M \subseteq V \cup V^{\prime}$. A vertex $v \in V \backslash M$ (resp. $v \in V^{\prime} \backslash M$ ) distinguishes $M$ if it has a neighbour in $M \cap V^{\prime}$ (resp. $M \cap V$ ) and a non-neighbour in $M \cap V^{\prime}$ (resp. $M \cap V$ ). A nonempty subset $M$ of $V \cup V^{\prime}$ is a bimodule of $G$ if no vertex distinguishes $M$. It follows from the definition that $V \cup V^{\prime}$ is a bimodule of $G$, and so are all the singletons and all the pairs with exactly one vertex from $V$. These bimodules are the trivial bimodules of $G$.

A zed is a graph isomorphic to a $P_{4}$ or any induced subgraph of it. We note that a trivial bimodule is a zed.

Lemma 5.18. A connected twin-free co-bipartite graph $G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ has a Type $I$ $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation if and only if $G$ contains a zed $Z$ such that
(i) $Z$ is a bimodule of $G_{B}=B\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$, and
(ii) $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph.

Moreover, if $Z$ is a minimal set of vertices that satisfies $i)$, ii) and $G[Z]$ is a set of two isolated vertices, then for the unique segment $S$ of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$ the following hold
(i) $S$ is contained in at least one of the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{Z}$,
(ii) the endpoints of $S$ have degree 3 in $\cup \mathcal{P}$ and these endpoints constitutes split $\left(\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}, \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right)$.

Proof. $(\Rightarrow)$ Let $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a Type I $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of $G$. By Lemma 5.16, $\left|\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)\right|=1$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}$ is a tree. Let $u, v$ be the endpoints of the unique segment $S$ of $\mathcal{S}\left(K, K^{\prime}\right)$. We consider the following disjoint cases

- $\left\{e_{K}, e_{K^{\prime}}\right\} \nsubseteq E(S)$ : Let without loss of generality $e_{K} \notin E(S)$ and $u$ closer to $e_{K}$ than $v$. Consider two paths $P_{x^{\prime}}, P_{y^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ that cross $u$. We observe that these paths are indistinguishable by the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$. Namely, every path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ either does not intersect any one of $P_{x^{\prime}}, P_{y^{\prime}}$, or intersects both and splits from both at $u$. Therefore the corresponding vertices $x^{\prime}, y^{\prime}$ are twins. As $G$ is twin-free we conclude that there is at most one path of $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ that crosses $u$. Using the same


Figure 5.7. (a) Four special paths which are corresponding to a zed (b) The type of vertices and edge relations of a $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG cobipartite graph having a Type I representation.
argument it can be shown that there is at most one path of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ that crosses $v$. Let $\mathcal{P}_{Z^{\prime}}$ be a set of these at most two paths. Namely, $\mathcal{P}_{Z^{\prime}}$ consists of all the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ crossing $u$ and all the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ that cross $v$. We now observe that $\cup\left(\mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{Z^{\prime}}\right)$ is a path. Let $S^{\prime}$ be the sub-path of this path between the edges $e_{K}$ and $e_{K^{\prime}}$. The paths $\mathcal{P} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{Z^{\prime}}$ meet at $S^{\prime}$. Therefore, $G_{B} \backslash Z^{\prime}$ is a difference graph. We note that the path $P_{x} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ that crosses $u$ is an isolated vertex of $G_{B}$, therefore for $Z=Z^{\prime} \backslash\{x\}$ we have that $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph too. Since $|Z| \leq 1$ we have: (i) $Z$ is a trivial bimodule of $G_{B}$, (ii) $Z$ is a zed, (iii) the second part of the claim holds vacuously.

- $\left\{e_{K}, e_{K^{\prime}}\right\} \subseteq E(S)$ : Assume without loss of generality that $e_{K}$ is closer to $u$ than $e_{K^{\prime}}$, see Figure 5.7. Consider two paths $P_{x^{\prime}}, P_{y^{\prime}} \in \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ that cross $u$ but not $v$. We observe that these paths are indistinguishable by the paths of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$. Therefore, the corresponding vertices are twins. As $G$ is twin-free we conclude that there is at most one path $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u}$ of $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ that crosses $u$ and does not cross $v$. Similarly there is at most one path $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u, v}$ of $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ that crosses both $u$ and $v$, at most one path $P_{K}^{v}$ of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ that crosses $v$ but does not cross $u$ and at most one path $\mathcal{P}_{K}^{u, v}$ of $\mathcal{P}_{K}$ that crosses both $u$ and $v$. Let $\mathcal{P}_{Z}$ be the set of these at most four paths. As in the previous case, after the removal of these paths we remain with a path and the $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph. Assuming that all the four paths exist, it is easy to verify that their corresponding vertices constitute a zed where the only edge is between the
vertices corresponding to $P_{K}^{v}$ and $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u}$. Therefore, $Z$ is a zed. Finally, we observe that $P_{K}^{v}$ and $P_{K}^{u, v}$ are distinguishable only by $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u} \in \mathcal{P}_{Z}$. In other words they are indistinguishable by paths from $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}} \backslash \mathcal{P}_{Z}$. By symmetry, we conclude that $Z$ is a bimodule of $G_{B}$. Finally we note that if $G_{B}[Z]$ consists of two vertices and none of the corresponding paths contains the segment $S$ then these paths are $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u}$ and $P_{K}^{v}$. But $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u} \sim P_{K}^{v}$. Therefore, if $G_{B}[Z]$ consists of two isolated vertices then at least one of the corresponding paths contains $S$. If both paths contain $S$, then these paths are $P_{K}^{u v}$ and $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u v}$ and we have $\operatorname{split}\left(\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}, \cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}\right) \supseteq \operatorname{split}\left(P_{K}^{u v}, P_{K^{\prime}}^{u v}\right)$ as claimed. Otherwise, one of the paths does not contain $S$. Let, without loss of generality this path be $P_{K^{\prime}}^{u}$. Then no path of $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$ crosses $v$. We conclude that $\cup\left(\mathcal{P} \backslash\left\{P_{K^{\prime}}^{u}\right\}\right)$ is a path. Contradicting the assumption that $Z$ is a minimal set satisfying the claimed properties.
$(\Leftarrow)$ Given a zed $Z$ of $G$ satisfying the conditions of the lemma, we construct a Type I representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ as follows. Without loss of generality we assume that $Z$ is a $P_{4}$. Let $\ell=\min \left(|K|,\left|K^{\prime}\right|\right)+2$. The subgraph $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph. Let $V(Z)=\left\{y, x, x^{\prime}, y^{\prime}\right\}$ where $x, y \in K, x^{\prime}, y^{\prime} \in K^{\prime}$ and $\left\{x, x^{\prime}\right\} \in E . P_{x}$ (resp. $P_{y}$ ) is a path between $(0,0)$ (resp. $(-1,0))$ and $(\ell, 1)$ with a bend at $(\ell, 0) . P_{x^{\prime}}$ (resp. $\left.P_{y^{\prime}}\right)$ is a path between $(\ell, 0)$ (resp. $(\ell+1,0))$ and $(0,-1)$ with a bend at $(0,0)$. It is easy to verify that this correctly represents $Z$. The representation of the difference graph $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is two sets of paths that meet at the line segment between $(0,0)$ and $(\ell, 0)$. By Lemma 5.14, the endpoints of the paths within this segment can be determined according to the difference graph $G_{B} \backslash Z$. The other endpoints of these paths are determined as follows. As $Z$ is a bimodule we have $N_{G}(x) \backslash\left\{x^{\prime}\right\}=N_{G}(y)$ and $N_{G}\left(x^{\prime}\right) \backslash\{x\}=N_{G}\left(y^{\prime}\right)$. The other endpoint of every path of $\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime} \cap N_{G}(y)}$ (resp. $\left.\mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime} \backslash N_{G}(y)}\right)$ is $(\ell, 0)$ (resp. $(\ell+1,0)$ ). The other endpoint of every path of $\mathcal{P}_{K \cap N_{G}\left(y^{\prime}\right)}$ (resp. $\left.\mathcal{P}_{K \backslash N_{G}\left(y^{\prime}\right)}\right)$ is ( 0,0 ) (resp. ( $-1,0$ )).

By Lemmata 5.17 and 5.18 we have
Theorem 5.19. Let $G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ be a connected, twin-free co-bipartite graph, and $G_{B}=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right) . G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}-\mathrm{ENPG}$ if and only if at least one of the following holds:
(i) $G_{B}$ contains at most two non-trivial connected components each of which is a difference graph.
(ii) $G$ contains a zed $Z$ that is a bimodule of $G_{B}$ such that $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph.

Since all the properties mentioned in Theorem 5.19 can be tested in polynomial time we have

Corollary 5.20. $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graphs can be recognized in polynomial time.

### 5.4.2. Efficient Recognition Algorithm

In the sequel we describe an efficient implementation of the above idea.
Theorem 5.21. Given a co-bipartite graph $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$, Algorithm 5.8 decides in time $O\left(|K|+\left|K^{\prime}\right|+|E|\right)$ whether $G$ is $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG.

Proof. The correctness of the algorithm follows from Observations 5.10, 5.11, Lemma 5.16 and from the correctness of ISTYPEI and ISTYPEII that we prove in the sequel.

Let $n=|K|+\left|K^{\prime}\right|, m=|E|$. Let also $T_{\text {diff }}(n, m)$ be the running time of ISDIFFERENCE on a graph with $n$ vertices and $m$ edges. Similarly, let $T_{b m}(n, m)$ be the running time of findBimoduleZed that finds the minimum zed of $G$ that is a bimodule of $G_{B}$ and contains a given zed $Z$. All the twins of a graph can be removed in time $O(n+m)$ by constructing its modular decomposition tree [35] and then searching (near the leaves of the tree) modules consisting of two adjacent edges.

The correctness of isTypeI is based on Lemma 5.18. A zed $Z$ of $G$ that is a bimodule of $G_{B}$ such that $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph is termed as an evidence through this proof.

We show that given a twin-free co-bipartite graph $G$ and $Z \subseteq V(G)$, IsTypeI returns "YES" if and only if there exists an evidence $Z^{\prime} \supseteq Z$. Moreover, we show that
its running time is at most $5^{5-|Z|}\left(T_{\text {diff }}(n, m)+T_{b m}(n, m)\right)$ when $|Z| \leq 4$ and constant otherwise. Since ISTYPEI is invoked initially with $Z=\emptyset$, by Lemma 5.18 this will imply that the algorithm is correct and its running time is $O\left(T_{d i f f}(n, m)+T_{b m}(n, m)\right)$. We first observe that if $Z$ is not a zed, then no superset of $Z$ is a zed, and the algorithm returns correctly "NO" in constant time at line 7. Therefore, our claim is correct whenever $Z$ is not a zed. We proceed by induction on $5-|Z|$. If $5-|Z|=0$, then $Z$ is not a zed and the algorithm returns "NO" at constant time. In the sequel we assume that $Z$ is a zed. In this case, IsTypeI verifies at constant time that $Z$ is a zed and proceeds to line 8 to find (in time $T_{b m}(n, m)$ ) the minimal bimodule $Z^{\prime}$ of $G_{B}$ that contains $Z$ and is a zed of $G$. We consider three cases according to the branching of ISTYPEI. We denote $\alpha(n, m) \stackrel{\text { def }}{=} T_{\text {diff }}(n, m)+T_{b m}(n, m)$.

- $\mathbf{Z}^{\prime}=\mathbf{Z}$ (i.e. $Z$ is a bimodule of $G_{B}$ ), and $\mathbf{G}_{\mathbf{B}} \backslash \mathbf{Z}$ is a difference graph: isTypeI verifies at line 10 that $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph. Finally it returns "YES" which is correct by Lemma 5.18 since $Z$ is an evidence. The running time is $\alpha(n, m)$, and the result follows since $1 \leq 5^{5-|Z|}$.
- $\mathbf{Z}^{\prime}=\mathbf{Z}$ (i.e. $Z$ is a bimodule of $G_{B}$ ), but $\mathbf{G}_{\mathbf{B}} \backslash \mathbf{Z}$ is not a difference graph: As $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is not a difference graph, there is a set $U \subseteq K \cup K^{\prime} \backslash Z$ such that $G_{B}[U]$ is a $2 K_{2}$. Every evidence $Z^{\prime} \supseteq Z$ must contain at least one vertex of $U$ because otherwise $G_{B} \backslash Z^{\prime}$ contains $G_{B}[U]$ which is a $2 K_{2}$. Therefore, the algorithm proceeds recursively by guessing each time a vertex $u \in U$. The algorithm returns "YES" if and only if one of the guesses succeeds. Then, the total running time is at most $\alpha(n, m)+4 \cdot 5^{5-(|Z|+1)} \alpha(n, m)=\left(1+\frac{4}{5} \cdot 5^{5-|Z|}\right) \alpha(n, m)$. Since $1 \leq$ $5^{4-|Z|}=\frac{1}{5} 5^{5-|Z|}$ we conclude that the running time is at most $5^{5-|Z|} \alpha(n, m)$.
- $\mathbf{Z}^{\prime} \neq \mathbf{Z}$ (i.e. $Z$ is not a bimodule of $G_{B}$ ): If $Z^{\prime}$ exists, by definition, any evidence that contains $Z$ has to contain $Z^{\prime}$. Therefore, $\operatorname{IsTypeI}\left(G, Z^{\prime}\right)$ is invoked and its result is returned. Otherwise, no evidence contains $Z$ and "NO" is returned. The running time of ISTYPEI is $T_{b m}(n, m)+5^{5-\left|Z^{\prime}\right|} \alpha(n, m)<5^{5-|Z|} \alpha(n, m)$.

We conclude that the running time of ISTYPEI is $O\left(T_{\text {diff }}(n, m)+T_{b m}(n, m)\right)$.
components of $G_{B}$ can be calculated in time $O(n+m)$ using breadth first search. Therefore, the running time of isTypeII is $O\left(T_{\text {diff }}(n, m)\right)$. Summarizing, the running time of Algorithm 5.8 is $O\left(T_{\text {diff }}(n, m)+T_{b m}(n, m)\right)$.
$T_{\text {diff }}(m, n)$ is $O(m+n)$ [36]. We now show the correctness of FindBimoduleZed and calculate its running time $T_{b m}(m, n)$.

- $Z=\emptyset$ or $Z$ is a singleton or $Z$ is a pair of vertices of $K \times K^{\prime}$. By definition, $Z$ is both a zed of $G$ and a bimodule of $G_{B}$. Therefore, $Z$ is the minimal bimodule of $G_{B}$ that is a zed of $G$, and contains $Z$. The algorithm returns $Z$ in constant time.
- Without loss of generality $Z \cap K$ contains at least two vertices $u_{1}, u_{2}$. We note that $Z \cap K=\left\{u_{1}, u_{2}\right\}$, because otherwise $Z$ contains a $K_{3}$ contradicting the fact that it is a zed. Let $Z^{\prime}$ be the superset of $Z$ obtained by adding to it all the vertices that distinguish $u_{1}$ and $u_{2}$. In other words, $Z^{\prime} \stackrel{\text { def }}{=}\left(N_{G_{B}}\left(u_{1}\right) \triangle N_{G_{B}}\left(u_{2}\right)\right) \cup Z$. We note that $Z^{\prime}$ can be calculated in time $O\left(\left|K^{\prime}\right|\right)$. If $Z^{\prime}$ is not a zed we can return at constant time that no superset of $Z$ is both a zed of $G$ and a bimodule of $G_{B}$. Assume $Z^{\prime}$ is a zed, let $U^{\prime}=Z^{\prime} \cap K^{\prime}$. If $\left|U^{\prime}\right| \leq 1$ then $Z^{\prime}$ is the minimal subset that contains $Z$ and is both a zed of $G$ and a bimodule of $G_{B}$. If $\left|U^{\prime}\right| \geq 2$ then $Z^{\prime}$ is not a zed. Assume $\left|U^{\prime}\right|=2$ and let $U^{\prime}=\left\{u_{1}^{\prime}, u_{2}^{\prime}\right\}$. We now add to $Z^{\prime}$, in time $O(K)$, the set of vertices of $K$ that distinguish $U^{\prime}$ to get $Z^{\prime \prime}$. If $Z^{\prime \prime}=Z^{\prime}$ then $Z^{\prime}$ is the minimal superset of $Z$ that is both a zed of $G$ and a bimodule of $G_{B}$. Otherwise every bimodule that contains $Z^{\prime}$ has to contain also $Z^{\prime \prime}$. However $\left|Z^{\prime \prime} \cap K\right|>|Z \cap K|=2$, implying that $Z^{\prime \prime}$ contains a $K_{3}$, is thus not a zed. In this case, we conclude that there is no superset of $Z$ as required.

We note that all the steps can be executed at time at most $O\left(|K|+\left|K^{\prime}\right|\right)=O(n)$, i.e. $T_{b m}(m, n)=O(m, n)$. Therefore, the running time of the algorithm is $O\left(T_{d i f f}(n, m)+\right.$ $\left.T_{b m}(n, m)\right)=O(n+m)$.

We conclude with an interesting remark, pointing to a fundamental difference

Require: A co-bipartite graph $G=\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$
if $G$ is not connected then return "YES"
Make $G$ twin-free using modular decomposition.
if isTypei $(G, \emptyset)$ or isTypeII $(G)$ then return "YES".
return "NO".
function $\operatorname{IsTypeI}\left(G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right), Z\right)$
Require: $G$ is connected, twin-free, $Z \subseteq V(G)$
Ensure: returns whether there is an evidence $Z^{\prime} \supseteq Z$ for $G$ being Type I $G_{B} \leftarrow B\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$. if $G[Z]$ is not a zed then return "NO". $Z^{\prime} \leftarrow \operatorname{FindBimoduleZed}(G, Z)$.
if $Z^{\prime}=Z$ then $\triangleright Z$ is a zed of $G$ and also a bimodule of $G_{B}$ if ISDIFFERENCE $\left(G_{B} \backslash Z\right)$ then return "YES".
Let $U \subseteq\left(K \cup K^{\prime}\right) \backslash Z$ such that $G_{B}[U]$ is a $2 K_{2}$. for $u \in U$ do
if $\operatorname{isTypeI}(G, Z \cup\{u\})$ then return "YES". return "NO".
else
if $Z^{\prime} \neq N U L L$ then return $\operatorname{isTypeI}\left(G, Z^{\prime}\right)$. else return "NO".
function $\operatorname{ISTyPEII}\left(G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)\right)$
Require: $G$ is connected, twin-free $G_{B} \leftarrow B\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$. Remove all isolated vertices from $G_{B}$.
Calculate the connected components $G_{1}, \ldots, G_{k}$ of $G_{B}$.
if $k>2$ then return "NO".
if isDifference $\left(G_{1}\right)$ and isDifference $\left(G_{2}\right)$ then return "YES".
return "NO".
function FindBimoduleZed $\left(G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right), Z\right)$
Require: $G$ is twin-free, $Z$ is a zed of $G$
Ensure: Returns the minimum superset of $Z($ a zed of $G)$ and a bimodule of $G_{B}$ if $|Z \cap K| \leq 1$ and $\left|Z \cap K^{\prime}\right| \leq 1$ then return $Z$.
Let without loss of generality $Z \cap K=\left\{u_{1}, u_{2}\right\}$.
$Z^{\prime} \leftarrow\left(N_{G_{B}}\left(u_{1}\right) \triangle N_{G_{B}}\left(u_{2}\right)\right) \cup Z$.
if $Z^{\prime}$ is not a zed then return NULL.
$U^{\prime} \leftarrow Z^{\prime} \cap K^{\prime}$.
if $\left|U^{\prime}\right| \leq 1$ then return $Z^{\prime}$.
Let without loss of generality $U^{\prime}=\left\{u_{1}^{\prime}, u_{2}^{\prime}\right\}$.
$Z^{\prime \prime} \leftarrow\left(N_{G_{B}}\left(u_{1}^{\prime}\right) \triangle N_{G_{B}}\left(u_{2}^{\prime}\right)\right) \cup Z^{\prime}$.
if $Z^{\prime \prime}=Z^{\prime}$ then return $Z^{\prime}$
else return NULL.
function ISDIFFERENCE $(G)$ [36]
Require: $G$ is bipartite
Ensure: Returns "YES" if $G$ is a difference graph and a $2 K_{2}$ of $G$ otherwise.
Figure 5.8. $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG $\cap$ Co-bipartite Recognition Algorithm.
between EPG and ENPG graphs. A graph is $\mathrm{B}_{k}$ - EPG if it has a EPG representation $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ such that every path has at most $k$ bends. It is known that given a $\mathrm{B}_{k}$-EPG representation it is always possible to modify the paths such that every path has exactly $k$ bends. The following corollary shows that this does not hold for $\mathrm{B}_{k}$ - ENPG graphs.

Proposition 5.22. Every $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG representation of a graph $G=C\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ such that $G_{B}=B\left(K, K^{\prime}, E\right)$ is isomorphic to $3 K_{2}$ contains at least one path with zero bend.

Proof. Let $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ be a representation of $G$. Since $G_{B}$ has three non-trivial connected components, by Lemma 5.17, $\langle H, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ is a Type I representation. By Theorem 5.13, $G_{B}$ is not a difference graph since it contains $2 K_{2}$. Let $Z$ be a zed of $G$ and a bimodule of $G_{B}$ such that $G_{B} \backslash Z$ is a difference graph. If $Z$ consists of two vertices of $K$ (or $K^{\prime}$ ), then these two vertices are twins, however $G$ is twin-free. Therefore $Z$ contains two vertices $x \in K, y^{\prime} \in K^{\prime}$. Moreover, without loss of generality, $\left\{x, y^{\prime}\right\} \notin E$ as otherwise $G_{B} \backslash Z$ contains a $2 K_{2}$. We now observe that $Z=\left\{x, y^{\prime}\right\}$ is a zed of $G$, a bimodule of $G_{B}$ and $G_{B} \backslash Z$ does not contain a $2 K_{2}$. Let $y$ and $x^{\prime}$ be the unique neighbors in $G_{B}$ of $x$ and $y^{\prime}$ respectively. Since $G[Z]$ is a set of two isolated vertices, by Lemma 5.18 , there are two split points of $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K}$ and $\cup \mathcal{P}_{K^{\prime}}$, say $u$ and $v$. By the same lemma, $P_{x}$ or $P_{y^{\prime}}$ crosses $u, v$. Let $P_{x}$ be such a path. Then $P_{x^{\prime}}$ does not cross neither $u$ nor $v$. Moreover in any representation of $G$ there is no bend point between two split points otherwise $P_{x}$ would have more than one bend. Therefore $P_{x^{\prime}}$ is a path with zero bend.

## 6. CONCLUSIONS

In this thesis, we introduced and studied a new family of graphs, called the graphs of Edge- Intersecting Non-Splitting Paths (ENP). These graphs enable us to model optimization problems arising in telecommunication networks. We do not focus on solving this specific application but instead on establishing results characterizing various properties of ENP graphs in order to use them in the design of efficient algorithms. This work contains non-trivial results about this new graph class that opens a wide field of research. Many interesting questions are still open and the "split" condition introduced in this work is not limited to optical networks but enables new applications to be modeled as a graph problem.

In Chapter 3, we start with a fairly natural case where the host graph is a tree, namely ENPT graphs. We follow mainly the work of Golumbic and Jamison's [22] for a very related graph class EPT. Cycles are simple yet one of the fundamental graph structures. EPT representation of cycles have a unique and simple characterization [22]. It turns out that this is not the case for ENPT graphs. There are many nonequivalent ENPT representations for a given cycle. To make the problem tractable, we assume that the EPT graph is also given as an input. We propose a new problem; given a pair of graphs $(G, C)$ where $G$ is an arbitrary graph and $C$ is an Hamiltonian cycle of $G$, is there any representation $\langle T, \mathcal{P}\rangle$ such that $\operatorname{EPT}(\mathcal{P})$ is isomorphic to $G$ and $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})$ is isomorphic to $C$. We show that this problem is NP-complete in general, however for a special case (which is a restriction on the representations) we propose an algorithm which decides (and constructs a representation) in polynomial-time. As a by-product, a family of non-ENPT graphs is presented.

In Chapter 4, we consider the general case where the host graph can be an arbitrary graph. Although the Edge Intersection Graphs of Paths in an arbitrary graph includes all graphs, we show that this is not true for ENP. We also show that the class ENP coincides with the family of graphs of Edge-Intersecting and Non-Splitting Paths in a Grid (ENPG). Following similar studies for EPG graph class, we study
the implications of restricting the number of bends in the grid, of the individual paths. We show that restricting the number of bends also restricts the graph class. More concretely, by restricting the number of bends one gets an infinite sequence of classes such that every class is properly included in the next one. In addition, we show that one bend ENPG graphs are properly included in two bend ENPG graphs.

In Chapter 5, we show that trees and cycles are one bend ENPG graphs, and characterize the split graphs and co-bipartite graphs that are one bend ENPG. We prove that the recognition problem of one bend ENPG graphs is NP-complete even in a very restricted subfamily of split graphs. Last, we provide a linear time recognition algorithm for one bend ENPG co-bipartite graphs.

We now summarize open questions and research directions presented in the previous chapters.

It is known that EPT recognition is NP-complete. In this work, we show that it remains NP-complete even if we label edges "splitting" in case of the corresponding paths split in some representation. The main difficulty originates from deciding a given clique whether it is represented by an edge clique or a claw clique. The complexity of the recognition problem when this information is provided by an oracle is open. ENPT recognition in general is also open. We showed that pair recognition is NP-complete however this result does not imply that ENPT recognition is NP-complete. Given an ENPT graph we have the flexibility to choose EPT edge in which case there could be a polynomial time algorithm. Since the only known forbidden subgraphs of ENPT are also forbidden for EPT, to answer this question we need more forbidden structures of ENPT.

Recall that $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split recognition is NP-complete. By following a similar research direction as cycles, another interesting research direction is to investigate the complexity of $(G, S)$ recognition where (i) $G$ and $S$ are defined on the same vertex set (ii) $S$ is a split graph $(3) \operatorname{Ept}(\mathcal{P})=G$ and $\operatorname{Enpt}(\mathcal{P})=S$.

The maximum clique problem in ENPT graphs can be solved in polynomial time using a clique enumeration algorithm even if the representation is not available. Investigating a more efficient maximum clique algorithm can be an interesting research direction. The time complexity of other important graph problems such as maximum independent set and minimum vertex coloring are still open.

Even though Theorem 5.19 gives a characterization of $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graphs, a forbidden subgraph characterization is unkown. We have a list of forbidden structures, however a complete characterization is work in progress. Theorems 5.3 and 5.19 give characterizations for $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split and cobipartite graphs respectively. Maximum cut problem is NP-complete in split and co-bipartite graphs however using these structural properties one might be able to devise polynomial time algorithms for respectively $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG split and co-bipartite graphs. We have some partial results for $\mathrm{B}_{1}$-ENPG co-bipartite graphs [29].

## REFERENCES

1. Chlamtac, I., A. Ganz and G. Karmi, "Lightpath Communications: An Approach to High Bandwidth Optical WAN's", IEEE Transactions on Communications, Vol. 40, No. 7, pp. 1171-1182, 1992.
2. Ramaswami, R., "Multi-wavelength lightwave networks for computer communication", IEEE Communications Magazine, Vol. 31, pp. 78-88, 1993.
3. Du, D. H. C. and R. J. Vetter, "Distributed computing with high-speed optical networks", Proceeding of IEEE Computer, Vol. 26, pp. 8-18, 1993.
4. Gerstel, O., R. Ramaswami and G. Sasaki, "Cost effective traffic grooming in WDM rings", INFOCOM'98, Seventeenth Annual Joint Conference of the IEEE Computer and Communications Societies, 1998.
5. Flammini, M., G. Monaco, L. Moscardelli, M. Shalom and S. Zaks, "Optimizing Regenerator Cost in Traffic Grooming", Theoretical Computer Science, Vol. 412, No. 52, pp. 7109-7121, 2011.
6. Golumbic, M. C. and R. E. Jamison, "Edge and vertex intersection of paths in a tree", Discrete Mathematics, Vol. 55, No. 2, pp. 151-159, 1985.
7. Tsukiyama, S., M. Ide, H. Ariyoshi and I. Shirakawa, "A New Algorithm for Generating All the Maximal Independent Sets", SIAM Journal on Computing, Vol. 6, No. 3, pp. 505-517, 1977.
8. Tarjan, R. E., "Decomposition by clique separators", Discrete Mathematics, Vol. 55, No. 2, pp. 221 - 232, 1985.
9. Golumbic, M. C., M. Lipshteyn and M. Stern, "Equivalences and the complete hierarchy of intersection graphs of paths in a tree", Discrete Appl. Math., Vol. 156,
pp. 3203-3215, 2008.
10. Golumbic, M. C., M. Lipshteyn and M. Stern, "Representing edge intersection graphs of paths on degree 4 trees", Discrete Mathematics, Vol. 308, No. 8, pp. 1381-1387, 2008.
11. Golumbic, M. C., M. Lipshteyn and M. Stern, "The k-edge intersection graphs of paths in a tree", Discrete Appl. Math., Vol. 156, pp. 451-461, 2008.
12. Biedl, T. C. and M. Stern, "On edge-intersection graphs of k-bend paths in grids", Discrete Mathematics ${ }^{8}$ Theoretical Computer Science, Vol. 12, No. 1, pp. 1-12, 2010.
13. Golumbic, M. C., M. Lipshteyn and M. Stern, "Edge intersection graphs of single bend paths on a grid", Networks, Vol. 54, No. 3, pp. 130-138, 2009.
14. Biedl, T. C. and M. Stern, "On edge-intersection graphs of k-bend paths in grids", Discrete Mathematics ${ }^{6}$ Theoretical Computer Science, Vol. 12, No. 1, pp. 1-12, 2010.
15. Heldt, D., K. Knauer and T. Ueckerdt, "Edge-intersection graphs of grid paths: The bend-number", Discrete Applied Mathematics, Vol. 167, No. 0, pp. 144-162, 2014.
16. Asinowski, A. and B. Ries, "Some properties of edge intersection graphs of singlebend paths on a grid", Discrete Mathematics, Vol. 312, No. 2, pp. 427-440, 2012.
17. Epstein, D., M. Golumbic and G. Morgenstern, "Approximation algorithms for B1-EPG graphs", Lecture Notes in Computer Science (including subseries Lecture Notes in Artificial Intelligence and Lecture Notes in Bioinformatics), Vol. 8037 LNCS, pp. 328-340, 2013.
18. Golumbic, M. C., Algorithmic Graph Theory and Perfect Graphs (Annals of Dis-
crete Mathematics, Vol 57), North-Holland Publishing Co., Amsterdam, The Netherlands, 2004.
19. Boyacı, A., T. Ekim, M. Shalom and S. Zaks, "Graphs of Edge-Intersecting NonSplitting Paths in a Tree: Towards Hole Representations", The Proceedings of the 39th International Workshop on Graph-Theoretic Concepts in Computer Science (WG), Luebeck, Germany, pp. 115-126, 2013.
20. Boyaci, A., T. Ekim, M. Shalom and S. Zaks, "Graphs of Edge-Intersecting NonSplitting Paths in a Tree: Towards Hole Representations-Part I", CoRR, Vol. abs/1309.2898, 2013.
21. Boyaci, A., T. Ekim, M. Shalom and S. Zaks, "Graphs of Edge-Intersecting Non-Splitting Paths in a Tree: Representations of Holes-Part II", CoRR, Vol. abs/1309.6471, 2013.
22. Golumbic, M. C. and R. E. Jamison, "The edge intersection graphs of paths in a tree", Journal of Combinatorial Theory, Series B, Vol. 38, No. 1, pp. 8-22, 1985.
23. Chartrand, G. and F. Harary, "Planar permutation graphs", Annales de l'institut Henri Poincaré (B) Probabilités et Statistiques, Vol. 3, No. 4, pp. 433-438, 1967.
24. Hajnal, A. and J. Surányi, "Über die Auflösung von Graphen in vollständige Teilgraphen", Ann. Univ. Sci. Budapest Eötrös Sect. Math., Vol. 1, pp. 113-121, 1958.
25. Tucker, A., "Characterizing circular-arc graphs", Bulletin of the American Mathematical Society, Vol. 76, No. 6, pp. 1257-1260, 1970.
26. Boyacı, A., T. Ekim, M. Shalom and S. Zaks, "Graphs of Edge-Intersecting and Non-Splitting Paths", The proceedings of the 15th Italian Conference on Theoretical Computer Science (ICTCS), Perugia, Italy, pp. 45-58, 2014.
27. Asinowski, A. and A. H. Suk., "Edge intersection graphs of a system of paths in a
grid", Discrete Applied Mathematics, Vol. 157, pp. 3174-3180, 2009.
28. Yanpei, L., A. Morgana and B. Simeone, "General theoretical results on rectilinear embedability of graphs", Acta Mathematicae Applicatae Sinica, Vol. 7, p. 187192, 1991.
29. Boyaci, A., T. Ekim and M. Shalom, "The Maximum Cut Problem in Co-bipartite Chain Graphs", CoRR, Vol. abs/1504.03666, 2015.
30. Garey, M., D. Johnson and R. Tarjan, "The Planar Hamiltonian Circuit Problem is NP-Complete", SIAM Journal on Computing, Vol. 5, No. 4, pp. 704-714, 1976.
31. Kotzig, A., "Aus der Theorie der endlichen regulären Graphen dritten und vierten Grades", C̆asopis Pěst. Mat., Vol. 3, No. 82, pp. 76-92, 1957.
32. Bodlaender, H. L. and K. Jansen, "On The Complexity Of The Maximum Cut Problem", Nordic Journal of Computing, 2000.
33. Hammer, P. L., U. N. Peled and X. Sun, "Difference Graphs", Discrete Appl. Math., Vol. 28, No. 1, pp. 35-44, 1990.
34. Fouquet, J.-L., M. Habib, F. de Montgolfier and J.-M. Vanherpe, "Bimodular Decomposition of Bipartite Graphs", 30th International Workshop on Graph Theoretic Concepts in Computer Science, WG, pp. 117-128, 2004.
35. Tedder, M., D. Corneil, M. Habib and C. Paul, "Simpler Linear-Time Modular Decomposition Via Recursive Factorizing Permutations", Proc. 35th International Colloquium on Automata, Languages and Programming (ICALP 2008), pp. 634645, Springer-Verlag, 2008.
36. Heggernes, P. and D. Kratsch, "Linear-time Certifying Recognition Algorithms and Forbidden Induced Subgraphs", Nordic J. of Computing, Vol. 14, No. 1, pp. 87-108, 2007.
